



For more African books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>

## **INTRODUCTION**

### **1st Character:**

He used to be the best but he changed after marriage. I believe that I have rushed into marriage. He is now a monster in a human mask. I call him 'Prince Gangster' because he is from a royal family and he does not mind killing people in cold blood. He is the biggest gangster in town and I only found out after marriage. How was I to run for my life? I mean his family does not like me at all but they'd kill me for divorcing their son. Weird, right? Well father left my sisters and I when we were very young. We even forgot about him. The love of money is the root of all evil, money changed our mother into a monster.

I am 21 years of age, married to a half Black American and half Tswana guy by the name Tremaine 'Trey' Leano Anderson. He is 26 years of age. He's got love deep down his heart but his father turned him into a monster. My name is Mitchell 'Mish' Moraka-Anderson. I am a Tswana lady. I live in the suburbs of Johannesburg, South Africa, with my husband, T.L Anderson. This is the story of my life. MY MARRIAGE IS COLLAPSING AND WE JUST GOT MARRIED, can you imagine?

### **2nd Character:**

It was arranged marriage and I fell in love with him on the night of our wedding. How was I supposed to know that he'd change after two months of our wedding? My mom rushed me into this marriage because of the love she has for money. I got married to the wrong man. Money is literally his other name but why should I care about money when love is not enough? He is very controlling and rude. He does not mind bringing girls into our home. He does not mind slapping me in front of his friends and their girlfriends. He does not mind slapping me in my mother's presence and in my sisters' presence. He is a monster. His mother loves me so much but he doesn't listen to his mother but his father.

I am 23 years of age, married to a coloured guy by the name Delano Louis. He is 28 years of age. My name is Kitso 'Tso' Moraka-Louis. I am a Tswana lady. I live in the suburbs of Johannesburg, South Africa, with my husband D. Louis. This is the story of my life. MY MARRIAGE IS COLLAPSING AND WE JUST GOT MARRIED.

### **3rd Character:**

He was my high school sweetheart, he was so abusive in high school but I think that now he is worse. Who knew that my

marriage would collapse so soon? Who knew that I'd be stuck with him for life? I hardly see my sisters because of him. Whether I see mom or not, I don't care - her friend and family is money. I can't run away from my marriage because mom would kill me. I got married to my high school sweetheart not because I wanted but because I was forced by my mom, well I learned to love him again. What I am going through is what my mom went through when she was growing up. It's like she's making me pay for what she went through. But I still love my husband.

I am 25 years of age, married to a Zulu guy by the name Lungile 'Lungi' Xulu. He is 30 years of age. My name is Bonolo 'Nolly' Moraka-Xulu. I am a Tswana lady. I live in the suburbs of Johannesburg, South Africa, with my husband L. Xulu. This is the story of my life. MY MARRIAGE IS COLLAPSING AND WE JUST GOT MARRIED.

### **>>> Summary - Intro <<<**

The story is about Three Beautiful Sisters who rushed into marriage and they married wrong men. The sisters' mother is Malebo Moraka and the father is Daniel Molefe. Daniel Molefe left his family when the sisters were still young. Malebo Moraka loves money more than her own life. She is not a mother who

gives good advices to her daughters. Malebo would do anything to get money, she's got a very beautiful and huge house in the suburbs of Johannesburg, South Africa. She also got a company of her own by the name 'MM Holdings'. She's got a stripping club as well by the name "The Divas". She is always running after money and always forgets that she's got three daughters who are not happy in their marriage. In the story we'll come across Romance, Murder, Deception, Duplicity, Deviousness, Cunningness, Treachery, Tears, Heartbreak, and many more.

1

It's been two months ever since Kitso got married. It's been three months ever since Mitchell got married and it's been a month and a half ever since Bonolo got married. And the story begins when the husbands were no longer sweet, they have changed to the worst.

...

[Mitchell / Mish]

I woke up in the morning only to find my husband, Trey not sleeping next to me. I went to the bathroom and just kept myself hygienic clean. It was 07:55 when I got done with everything in the bathroom. I was getting ready for work so I got dressed and went to the kitchen. I found Trey sitting down on one of the kitchen chairs. I looked at him and greeted.

...

Trey: Were you not supposed to wake up early just so you can prepare breakfast for me?

Me: I'm sorry, I woke up a bit late, I didn't hear the alarm.

Trey: Well I am going to work, I don't have time to eat now.

Me: Can I please get a lift?

Trey: Sure.

...

I smiled and followed him. We work together at his company. So he drove off to work. On our way to work, he spoke.

...

Trey: Honey?

Me: Yes?

Trey: If I see you entertaining men at work again, you and I will have a big problem, got that?

Me: Loud and clear.

Trey: I love you.

Me: I love you too.

...

He looked at me and smiled. Tremaine is really weird. One moment he's cold and the next moment he's hot towards me. Last week I found out that he's a gangster. I really don't know what I got myself into. We finally arrived at work. Shoot me for being friendly because my husband does not want that. Work was really nice. I was in my office when one of my male colleagues walked in.

...

Him: Mrs Anderson, can you please sign these papers for me?

Me: Mrs Moraka-Anderson.

Him: (As He Smiles) My bad, please forgive me.

Me: (As I Also Smile) You are so forgiven.

...

We chatted as I was signing the papers for him. He made me laugh a lot, It was just nice. I then gave him the papers. He got up and started walking to the door. I don't know when and how but Trey was standing at the door. Just after he got greeted by the guy who was in my office, he closed the door and came closer to me. He spoke.

...

Trey: And what was that all about?

Me: He wanted me to sign some papers for him, Trey.

Trey: You are lying to me.

Me: But you saw him leaving my office with the papers.

Trey: Mitchell, what did I say about entertaining males?

Me: I'm sorry but I am here to do my work, I just signed papers for him and I had to be friendly.

...



A slap is what I got from Trey. I got up from the chair and went to the door. I had teary eyes. Trey spoke.

...

Trey: Get back here.

Me: No.

Trey: I SAID GET BACK HERE, WOMAN!!!

Me: So that you can slap me again? No.

Trey: You'll know me when we get home.

...

I remembered that five days ago I did something that Trey does not like, which is being friendly to our male staff so when we got home, Trey took out a belt and whipped the living life out of me. So just because I didn't want the same thing to happen today, I went to him. I expected another hot slap but he surprised me with a kiss - A very passionate kiss. I kissed him back because I didn't want to upset him. He started getting naughty by unzipping my jacket, so I pushed him away and the tears I had in my eyes decided to roll down my cheeks. He then spoke.

...

Trey: What is it? Why did you push me away?

Me: Because we are at work, anyone could walk in on us.

Trey: But I don't care.

Me: Well, I care.

...

He strangled me and began licking my face. God, what happened to my husband? This man can't be my husband. I struggled to breathe and just shed more tears. I tried removing his hand from my neck but he was just too strong to let go. When someone knocked on the door, that's when Trey left me. He then quickly helped me sit down and gave me a glass of water. I was coughing so much. Trey then spoke.

...

Trey: Yes, come in

...

The person who was knocking walked in. Thank God It was a female. She wanted to know if she could use the boardroom for the day. Trey told her that the boardroom is all hers, she then looked at me and spoke.

...

Her: Are you okay, ma'am?

Me: Yeah, I am fine. My throat just hurts, that's all.

Her: I have throat medication, should I bring it for you?

Me: No, I'll come with you.

...

I said that because I just wanted to get away from Trey.

...

[Kitso / Tso]

My husband, Delano is throwing a party at our house tonight. I didn't want this party but I just have to be in Delano's good books for today because I don't want to upset him. Delano was outside when I went to him.

...

Me: Hey, honey.

Lano: Please sit down.

Me: Okay then.. But am I in trouble?

Lano: No.

Me: Okay.

...

I sat down next to him. He then started talking about the party.

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">...

Lano: Tso, I need you to be on your best behavior tonight, okay?

Me: No problem.

Lano: Don't be jealous when you see me with other females, okay?

Me: Uhm... Okay.

Lano: Good. You can invite your sisters.

Me: I already did but I guess they are busy because they haven't replied my emails.

Lano: Call them, please.

Me: Okay, I'll go and call them now.

Lano: And you must also invite your mom to come here.

Me: But why her?

Lano: I am the one throwing a party so don't ask me many questions.

Me: Fine... I'll invite her.

Lano: Good.

Me: Is your mother also coming?

Lano: It's not your business, go back to the house and call your mother and sisters... Ohh, your sisters can bring their husbands.

Me: Okay, fine.

...

I got up and went to the house. I went straight to my bedroom and called Mom. My mom loves Delano so much so she didn't even say she'll think about it. She just said that she'll come. Well I am not looking forward to seeing my mom. I pray that Delano's mom will show up here. I really miss her. After calling mom on the phone, I also called Mish but her phone just rang so I decided to call Nolly.

...

[Bonolo / Nolly]

I was just watching TV when my phone rang. Mhmm, it was Tso calling. Well my husband, Lungile is not home so I guess it was safe to talk to my sister.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Me: Hey, Tso.

Tso: Hey sister, did you get my email?

Me: What email?

Tso: Delano is throwing a party tonight at our house so you are all invited.

Me: Lungile and I?

Tso: Yes.

Me: Uhm... Okay, I'll talk to Lungile when he gets back home.

Tso: Okay then thanks. Can you also do me a favor?

Me: What favor?

Tso: Please pass the message to Mish for me, I couldn't get her on the phone.

Me: So, how am I supposed to tell her?

Tso: You know. Call Trey.

Me: You know that Trey scares me so I can't.

Tso: But you'll be talking to him on the phone, please sister.

Me: Why don't you do it?

Tso: You know that ever since Trey got married he hardly smiles, so I am scared of him.

Me: I wonder what happened to him because he used to be the best.

Tso: What happened to Trey is the same thing that happened to our husbands.

Me: You can say that again. I am free to talk on the phone now because my husband is not here.

Tso: Sister, life is difficult. Who ever thought that we'd be this unhappy in life all because of our husbands?

Me: Our husbands and our mother.

Tso: Don't talk about that one, Delano forced me to invite her to the party.

Me: And I really do not want to see her.

Tso: That's me hey. Well, will you call Tremaine for me?

Me: Fine, I will.

Tso: Thank you, sister.

Me: It's okay, let me do it now and I'll get back to you.

Tso: Okay, No problem.

...

Tso hung up. I called Trey.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Trey: Hey, sister in-law.

Me: Hey, brother in-law, how are you?

Trey: I'm good thanks and you?

Me: I'm also good... Thanks, where's your wife, Mish?

Trey: In a meeting.

Me: Ohh, no wonder she couldn't answer her phone.

Trey: Yeah, what can I do for you?

Me: Delano is throwing a party at his house tonight and you are all invited.

Trey: Tso's husband?

Me: Yes.

Trey: Okay, we'll definitely be there.

Me: Thank you and please greet my sister for me.

Trey: I'll do that.

Me: Bye, Trey.

Trey: Bye sister in-law.

I hung up and took a deep breath. I guess that went well. Believe me when I say I was shaking. I called Tso back and told her that I spoke to Trey. She was happy. I actually can't wait for tonight's party. I have a feeling that it's gonna be nice. And I really can't wait to see my sisters.

To be continued...



2

[Lungile]

When I got home around 16:00, my wife, Bonolo told me about Delano's party.

...

Me: I have not even sat down but you are already telling me about a party, who gave you the freedom to be on the phone the whole day?

Nolly: I wasn't on the phone the whole day, I received an email and my sister also called me.

Me: I see. Well, I've got nothing to do tonight so we'll go to the party.

Nolly: Thanks.

Me: I am not doing it for you, I am doing it for myself.

Nolly: Of course.

Me: Do you know that you still have not greeted me properly?

Nolly: Sorry babe.

...

She came closer to me and hugged me. I then gave her a very passionate kiss and picked her up. I undressed her all the way

to our bedroom. We made love. After making love I talked to her.

...

Me: Baby?

Nolly: Yes?

Me: Don't forget to take your contraceptive pills, I don't want any unwanted pregnancy here.

Nolly: But baby, I am 25 years old and you are 30, we are also married. When are we going to have children?

Me: Don't start. Stop taking contraceptive pills and you'll pay with your life.

Nolly: Please forgive me. Forget what I said.

Me: Look at the time. Let's go take a bath so that we won't be late for the party.

Nolly: Okay, honey.

...

We got up and went to the bathroom.

...

[Mitchell / Mish]

I spent the whole day away from Trey. He has my phone and I wanted to go to my mom's place but mom does not like it when we just show up at her house without telling her. It was now 18:00 and the staff left at 16:00/17:00 but I have been in the bathroom for so long. I am scared that Trey might beat me up. As I was in the bathroom, I heard the door unlocking from outside. I got so scared and started crying. Trey was the one who unlocked the bathroom door and walked in.

...

Me: I'm sorry, please don't hurt me.

Trey: (As He Smiles) Look at you, you are a mess because of me. Come, let's go home. We are already late for the party.

Me: What party?

Trey: Delano is throwing a party at his house and we are invited, wipe off your tears.

...

He said that coming closer to me. He wiped off my tears and kissed my forehead. I was shocked because of his behavior. He then picked me up and left with me.

...

[Delano / Lano]

It was now 20:00 but I couldn't see Mitchell and Tremaine anywhere so I went to my wife when she was standing with her sister, Bonolo.

...

Me: Hey, beautiful ladies.

Tso: Hey, babe.

Nolly: Hey, brother in-law, how are you?

Me: I'm good thanks and you?

Nolly: I'm very good, thanks.

Me: So where's your husband?

Nolly: The bathroom, he'll soon be here.

Me: Good. And where's my other sister in-law and her husband?

Tso: They are coming, Mish just called me.

Nolly: Ohh, and they are over there.

...

She said that pointing at the door. The happy couple - they were all smiles as always. They finally came to us. The moment they came to us, Lungile also came back from the bathroom.

...

Mish: (As She Smiles) Oh My Word, hey everyone. You all look great.

Me: Thank you, Thank you. Y'all are stunning as well.

Lungi: Gents, are we getting wasted or not?

Me: Now you are speaking my language. Yes we are getting wasted.

Trey: Not me, guys. Not tonight.

Me: Why?

Trey: Because my wife won't let me.

Lungi: You and perfection though. Do you always have to listen to your wife?

Trey: You all know that we are the perfect couple, right? We do everything together.

Lungi: Yes, everyone knows that but come on, Man.

Trey: (As He Looks At Mish) Baby

Advertisement

should I drink?

...

Mish smiled at him and nodded.

...

[Kitso / Tso]

Wow, Trey can really lie and pretend. He's acting like a good husband and he's also acting like he always listen to Mish. Mish told us (Her sisters) everything about Trey and how he treats her. We even call Trey 'Prince Gangster'. What Prince Gangster does not know is that we, as sisters talk about everything. Mish and Trey always fake their smiles so that everyone can believe that they are happy. These people who are here love Mish and Trey so much but they don't know what happens behind closed doors. They don't even know that their lovely prince is a real gangster. As we were standing with our monsters of husbands, Malebo walked in. She came so late. I even thought that she was no longer coming. She greeted and spoke.

...

Mom: My daughters, you have such lovely husbands.

Nolly: Of course.

Mom: Anyway, sorry that I am late, I was busy.

Lano: It's okay, mom.

...

Our mother came with her bitchy friends. Believe me when I say mom's friends were all over our men. Like what happened to this old ladies? Mish spoke.

...

Mish: Mom, can I please go home with you after the party?

Mom: No, why?

Mish: I just miss being around you.

Mom: Well, not tonight.

Mish: But...

Mom: But nothing, Mitchell. You should go to your husband's house with him.

Mish: Sure.

...

Mish then walked away. I could tell that she was not okay so I went to her.

...

Me: Honey, what's going on?

Mish: I've got a feeling that when I get back to my house, Trey will beat me up.

Me: And why are you saying that?

Mish: Don't you ask yourself why I have a scarf around my neck? He strangled me at work today.

Me: But why?

Mish: I refused to have sex with him in my office and he was also angry that I was friendly to a male colleague.

Me: Sorry baby. Don't look back, he's coming here. Put on your fake smile.

Mish: But I have a lump on my throat, I really want to cry.

Me: Look, honey. You can do it, here's some wine, drink it and just smile.

Mish: (As She Takes A Deep Breath) Okay... You are right, I can do this.

...

[Tremaine / Trey]

Mitchell wanted to go to her mother's place all because of me. When her mother turned her down, she didn't look good at all and walked away. I saw her talking to Kitso so I thought I should interrupt before she tells her everything about me. I got to them and found them talking about a song.

...

Me: Ladies, is everything okay?



Tso: Yes, brother in-law, we were just talking about the song that is playing right now.

Me: It's good hey.

Mish: Very good.

Me: Kitso, can I please talk to my wife, alone?

Tso: (As She Smiles) Of course.

...

Kitso left us. I held Mitchell's hand and went outside with her. I made sure that the cost was clear then gave her a hot slap. I then spoke.

...

Me: Did you really have to pull that stunt in front of everyone?

Mish: What did I do?

Me: How can you want to go with your mom to her place? Don't I make you happy?

Mish: Do you want the truth? Of course you don't make me happy. You are a monster, Tremaine, you are a monster. You don't know how to treat a lady.

Me: Is that an insult?

Mish: If you want it to be an insult, then it is.

Me: Wow.

Mish: Trey, If you don't want me anymore, why don't you just set me free? Why don't you just sign the divorce papers? Why should you pretend to everyone that we are okay?

Me: Heyyyy, you are my wife and you won't go anywhere.

Mish: Why? What is it that you want from me? Have you forgotten how I always loved you? Have you?

Me: Shut up.

Mish: No, you shut up. I am talking. Expect divorce papers from me very soon and if you take me to court, I'll expose you for the monster that you are... you and your father.

...

She then walked away. Did Mish just defend herself in my presence? Did she just say she'll expose my father and I? Who does she think she is? I'll teach her a lesson she'll never forget.

...

To be continued...

3

[Bonolo / Nolly]

The party was nice but I couldn't see my husband or my sisters' husbands anywhere. So I went upstairs because I wasn't feeling well. I went there to look for painkillers. To my surprise I found my husband in bed with another girl. The moment the girl saw me, she pushed Lungile aside and spoke.

...

Her: Your wife is here.

Lungi: Tell her to go out.

Her: What? Just like that?

Lungi: Fine, I'll do it for you.

...

Lungile came closer to me and spoke.

...

Lungi: Do you want threesome?

Me: Look, Lungile... you can just continue banging that cheap slut, I am just here for the painkillers.

Lungi: So, won't you join us?

Me: Don't you dare disrespect me in front of another girl, a cheap whore for that matter.

...

That girl tried defending herself but I put her back in her lane. I took the painkillers and left. I went outside where no one saw me. I cried so much. Why would Lungile hurt me like this? I am really tired of this marriage. But isn't it too soon for divorce? As I was sitting down, crying alone. Kitso came to me. She sat down next to me. She was also crying.

...

Tso: I guess Lungile did something to you?

Me: I found him in bed with another girl.

Tso: I also found Delano in bed with two girls. Do you know what he said in the morning?

Me: What did he say?

Tso: He said that I shouldn't get jealous when I see him with other females.

Me: I guess he was talking about what you just saw now.

Tso: That's true.

Me: Sister, I am tired of this life and my marriage, I am going to walk away.

Tso: Or let's go to the police.

Me: How are we going to do that if we don't have any proof that we are abused?

Tso: Well, I guess you are right. Look, let's gather some evidence then we'll go to the police, is that okay?

Me: Yeah it is. But do you think that the cops will help us?

Tso: Let's hope so.

Me: Okay, we must tell Mitchell to do the same thing so that she can get Trey arrested.

Tso: No problem.

Me: I love you so much.

Tso: And I love you too, sister. Let me go and look for Mish.

Me: Do that.

...

Kitso left me. I wonder where and who is my prince charming. Lungile is obviously not the one for me and I can't tell mom because she doesn't care. Soon and very soon, I'll get all the monsters arrested, including mom.

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">...

[Mitchell / Mish]

It is finally the next day and last night Kitso told me what I should do to get Trey arrested. Talking of Trey, I haven't seen him ever since I defended myself in his presence. He didn't come home with me and I feel like I don't care anymore. For how long will I be treated like dirt? What is it that I did to Trey? Well I still love him and I was hoping that he'd change but he gets worse each and every day. As I was at home, my lawyer came with the divorce papers. When I told Trey that I want divorce, I meant it. I know that his family will not be happy but this is about my life. The lawyer explained everything to me and left. I signed the divorce papers and started packing up my bags. I took all my luggage but when I got to the garage, the cars were not there. I had to walk so that I can get taxis. I didn't know where I was going but I just had to go away from Trey. I didn't want to go to my mom's house because she was going to tell Trey. I also didn't want to go to my sisters' houses because that's where Trey will start looking for me. I finally got a taxi. In the taxi there was a weird guy who kept on looking at me. He was scaring me. I put on my headsets so that I can ignore him but he still stared at me. When I got off the taxi, he also did the same. Like, what is wrong with him?

...

[Delano / Lano]

Last night Kitso caught me in bed with two girls so she slept in another bedroom. I guess she is mad at me. I woke up, and the girls were still in my bed. I woke them up and told them to leave my house. I then went to the bathroom and kept myself hygienic clean. I went to Kitso after eating some breakfast. I found her lying in bed and reading a book.

...

Me: Morning, baby.

Tso: Sure.

Me: How did you sleep?

Tso: Fine.

Me: Baby, I am sorry about what you saw last night but you know that I am a man and all men are dogs.

Tso: Not all men are dogs.. You are the only dog in my life.

Me: Are you insulting me?

Tso: You are the one who insulted yourself, Delano. There are so many men out there who can take care of their wives and you my darling, are not one of them.

Me: ENOUGH!!! I am the only man in this house so you are going to respect me.

Tso: You know nothing about respect.

...

I pulled her by the leg and threw her on the floor. She got up and physically fought with me. This is actually happening for the first time. Kitso never says a lot when I shout at her and she never even raises her hand at me. I was shocked and she made sure that she beat me harder. We physically fought. She then took a glass vase and hit me with it. I fell on the floor and my head was spinning and bleeding.

...

Me: Baby, please help me get to the hospital.

Tso: Do you want me to help you after beating me up? Aren't you the one who pushed me to do this?

Me: Uhhhhh-Ouch... Baby please.

Tso: If you want to die, you can die.

Me: I am sorry.

...

[Kitso / Tso]

Delano was in so much pain because of me. I was now getting scared. I don't want him to die. I really do not want to go to jail for murder.

...



Me: Delano?? Please don't close your eyes, I'll help you.

Lano: Pl-please, hh-help me.

Me: Uhm... Okay, what should I do?

Lano: Ca-call mm-my ffa-father.

Me: So that he can get me arrested?? NOOO!!! ... Uhm... Look, I am coming, I'll help you.

...

I was now in tears. Why did I do what I did? Now what should I do? Who do I ask for help? I seriously can not call Delano's father. That man will kill me or he'll get me arrested. I called Bonolo but her phone just rang. I then called Mitchell and her phone was off. God, what do I do now?

...

To be continued...

4

[Mitchell / Mish]

I remember the weird guy following me. All of a sudden, a car pulled over next to me and two men forced me into the car. The weird guy who was looking at me in the taxi and who was following me also got in the same car. This whole thing was planned. I know that I don't want Trey anymore but right now I need him. We got to this other place, to my surprise I wasn't blindfolded so I got to see everything. My hands were tied though so when we got inside of the house, I was taken to this other bedroom. One guy spoke to me.

...

Him: Don't do anything stupid, boss won't be happy.

Me: Who are you?

Him: Does it matter?

Me: My husband will crash all of you, he will look for me, I know that he will.

Him: That's good.

Me: And I've seen all your faces so I will always remember you and I swear my husband will kill you.

Him: So if you still call him your husband why were you leaving him?

Me: Excuse me?

Him: I know that you signed divorce papers because you don't want your husband anymore.

...

I kept quiet and looked down. He laughed and spoke.

...

Him: For someone who is beautiful, you are very stupid, how can you want to leave your husband?

Me: How is it your business?

Him: Don't you love your husband?

Me: Leave me alone.

Him: You are so dead hey.

Me: I don't care about life anymore, kill me, you'll be doing me a favor.

Him: (Looking At The Door) Boss, you can come through.

Me: Who is your boss?

Him: Turn around and check him out.

...

I did exactly as I was told. My jaws dropped. I was extremely shocked. What is going on here???

...

[Lungile / Lungi]

But what happened to me? Why am I treating Bonolo the way I treat her? When did I become this evil? Today I didn't go to work so she was in the kitchen when I walked in.

...

Me: Morning, baby.

Nolly: Hi.

Me: Can we talk?

Nolly: Talk.

...

She was preparing breakfast so after preparing it, she ate alone and didn't even leave some for me. I spoke.

...

Me: Are you seriously not going to give your husband something to eat?

Nolly: Don't you have hands?

Me: I do but...

Nolly: Good.

...

She got up and washed the dishes. I was shocked. I guess she's mad at me that's why she's not giving me food. I spoke.

...

Me: Baby, I am sorry for everything.

Nolly: Okay.

Me: I mean it.

Nolly: Okay.

Me: Bonolo, please forgive me, I am sorry for everything, I have changed.

Nolly: Change is good.

Me: Are you really going to do this to me?

Nolly: Do what?

Me: Punish me?

Nolly: Look, I am going to make a call to my sisters and if you are going to have a problem with that, you can go and hang yourself, I am tired of you.

Me: BONOLO???!!!

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">...

She just walked away. I really don't know what's happening to me and my marriage but I know that everything is my fault. I'll try to make things better between my wife and I.

...

[Kitso / Tso]

Delano was now unconscious so I called Mish again and her phone was still off. I then called Bonolo and she finally answered.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Nolly: Hey, I was about to call you.

Me: Please come to my house now, he's going to die.

Nolly: Who?

Me: He is unconscious, he will die, he's bleeding, what should I do? Please help me, sister, please.

Nolly: Kitso, calm down and talk to me, I don't understand anything.

Me: Delano... Glass vase... He's bleeding.

Nolly: I don't understand anything you are saying but I am coming.

Me: Thanks, sister.

Nolly: Stay where you are, I'll be there.

Me: Okay, bye.

...

I hung up. I wonder why Mish's phone is off. Trey's phone is also off. God, please protect Mish wherever she is. Nolly finally came. I told her everything and she understood. I spoke.

...

Me: So what do we do?

Nolly: If you don't want him to die, we must take him to the hospital.

Me: And if they ask questions what are we going to say?

Nolly: We'll say he fell and his head hit the glass vase.

Me: Uhm... And what's going to happen once he wakes up?

Nolly: We'll cross that bridge when we get to it, for now let's take him to the hospital.

Me: Sure.

Nolly: Good. Please stop crying, everything will be fine.

Me: Thank you, sister.

Nolly: You are welcome. Dammit, he's so heavy.

Me: I know hey.

...

Off to the hospital we were. The doctor attended to him. As we were at the hospital, Delano's phone rang. It was in my pocket. I checked the caller ID and It was Delano's father. I spoke to Nolly.

...

Me: Sister, it's Mr Louis.

Nolly: Dammit. What does he want?

Me: How should I know?

Nolly: Don't answer it. Let him think that his useless son is busy.

Me: And what if he calls me?

Nolly: Well, switch off your phone now.

Me: Okay.

...

I switched off my phone. Nolly then spoke.



...

Nolly: Let's go.

Me: Where?

Nolly: I have a bad feeling about this day so let's go to the hotel, I feel like we are in danger.

Me: Okay, let's go. From today, I don't have a husband.

Nolly: (As She Laughs) Me too, so let's... OMG, SHE'S HERE??

Me: Who??

...

I turned around and looked at where Nolly's eyes were looking. I couldn't believe it. Why is she here?

...

To be continued...

5

[Bonolo / Nolly]

She may be covered with blood but I know my own sister. But what happened to her? I ran to the guy who brought her to the hospital. Kitso followed me.

...

Me: Excuse me, what happened to the girl that was just taken from you by the doctors?

Guy: I think she was brutally beaten up, I found her lying next to the road.

Me: Is she okay?

Guy: I don't know, but who are you?

Me: I am her sister, her name is Mish... Uhm... Mitchell and I am Bonolo.

Guy: Ohh, well my name is Aaron.

Tso: Thank you for bringing our sister to the hospital. Anyway my name is Kitso.

Guy: It's okay. I did what any great person would have done. Nice to meet you, Kitso.

Tso: Hey, Aaron... uhm... do you have a girlfriend? Do you stay alone?

Guy: Yes and yes., why?

...

Tso kept quiet. I wonder what is it that she was thinking about.

We waited for the doctors to come and tell us about Mish.

After an hour, one doctor came out.

...

Aaron: Doctor, how's she?

Doc: She's okay but she's got a fractured rib.

Me: Will it be okay?

Doc: Yes, it will be okay.

Tso: Can we see her please?

Doc: No problem.

...

The doctor left us.

...

Aaron: I guess it's time for me to go home now, may it be well with your sister.

Tso: No, Aaron. You can't just go like that. At least let our sister see the person who saved her life.

Me: Aaron, Kitso is right.

Aaron: Okay, fine then.

...

We went inside Mish's ward. She slowly opened her eyes and spoke.

...

Mish: Hey, my darlings.

Tso: What happened to you?

Mish: Uhm... Who's this guy?

Me: Ohh, his name is Aaron. He's the one who saved your life.

Mish: How? Did he kill him for me?

Me: Who?

Mish: Trey.

Aaron: I found you next to the road.

Tso: So Trey is the one who did this to you?

...

Mish nodded. I was in tears. Who does this to a female? What kind of a man is Trey? How can he beat up his own wife like this?

...

Me: Why did he beat you up?

Mish: Because I was leaving him. I signed divorce papers and left the house with my bags, got in a taxi and left. The time I got off the taxi, two men forced me into a car. When we got to this other house, I found Trey there. He went like "Do you want to leave me or do you want to get beaten up?" I then told him that I want to leave him and he was like if I leave him he has to beat me up and if I stay with him he won't beat me up so I chose to get beaten up so that he can set me free. He probably left me next to the road when I got unconscious.

Aaron: He's not a man. Look, I'll get restraining order sent to him. He shall be arrested if he comes near you again.

Tso: Aaron, Trey is not the jail type. Police favour him.

Aaron: I am a lawyer so I got this.

Mish: No, Aaron. He'll get you killed, my husband is very dangerous.

Aaron: I don't care. Let me make some few calls.

Advertisement

26, 26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">...

Aaron was just stubborn. He went out and made few calls. He then came back to us and sat down.

...

Aaron: What's his full name?

Mish: Tremaine Leano Anderson.

Aaron: Okay, I'll be right back at 18:00.

Tso: Noooo, Aaron. Please don't leave us alone. My husband is in this hospital because of me.

Aaron: What happened to him?

Tso: We physically fought and I took a glass vase and smashed it on his head.

Aaron: Why did you people rush into marriage? And why did you get married to monsters?

Tso: Well it's a long story but please get us to a safe place.

Aaron: Okay, fine.

...

I don't know how Aaron did it but he managed to convince the doctors to discharge Mish. We all left with Aaron. Kitso made sure that she leaves Delano's phone next to Delano. We got to Aaron's house and the doctor was already there. To treat Mish and to also take care of Kitso's bruises.

...

[Aaron]

No man should treat a woman the way these ladies are being treated by their husbands. I will get to the bottom of this. I finally got the papers to be signed by Mitchell... after that I gave them to the police to send them to Trey. I just pray that my jealous girlfriend will not act up when she finds out that I am staying with other females who are even hotter than her. I also got these ladies new simcards. Nobody should find them.

...

[One Week Later]

Mish was really getting better. Before going to work I went to her bedroom.

...

Me: Morning, beautiful.

Mish: Hey, Life Saver.

Me: How are you feeling today?

Mish: I feel much better, thanks.

Me: That's good. Look, I am going to work, please don't hesitate to call me when you need something.

Mish: No, Aaron. You've done a lot for my sisters and I.

Me: You deserve better, do you know that?

Mish: Yeah I know . Look, we always tried getting away from our husbands but couldn't so I really appreciate everything that you did for us just in a week, God will always bless you.

Me: Mhmm, Thank you.

Well the day after I came with these ladies to my house I made sure that I get evidence against their husbands. So they are now free even though their husbands refuse to sign divorce papers. All of their husbands are not allowed to come near them. I meant it when I said I'll get to the bottom of this.

Mish: What are you thinking about?

Me: Uhm... Nothing. I just enjoy looking at you.

Mish: (Laughs) Wow, you are weird.

Me: Am I?

Mish: Yeah, you are.

Me: I'm not. Uhm, anyway, I have to go. Please take care of yourself and your sisters.

Mish: I will. Take care of yourself as well and always be careful.

Me: Okay. I will.

I kissed her forehead and left. On my way to work, I felt like I was being followed. Well when I helped Mish, Tso and Nolly I



knew that my life would be in danger so I spoke to the law and they have my house secured 24/7 and I get security everywhere I go. Like I am the man who doesn't have privacy when I leave the house. Police follows me or watches me everyday, the whole day. But this time I don't think I was being followed by the police. I got to work. Later around 16:00, I left work. I saw a silver grey Mercedes Benz speeding up to my direction. The driver expected me to move but I didn't. The silver grey Mercedes Benz hit my car and started rolling. I laughed and spoke; "Some people and death get along, nothing can happen to my car." All of a sudden the police were surrounding that car. I also went there to see what was happening.

Me: Who is he?

Police: Mr Louis, he's Delano's father and Delano is...

Me: I know, don't worry.

They got Mr Louis out of the car and arrested him. I wonder who's next... Mr Anderson?? Well, I'll be ready.

To be continued...

6

[Mitchell / Mish]

I was in the kitchen with my sisters when Aaron walked in. He hugged my sisters then hugged me and kissed my cheek. How I wish Trey was like Aaron. Well, Aaron sat down next to me and spoke.

...

Aaron: Mitchell, why are you here? You should be in bed.

Me: I am helping my sisters cook.

Aaron: No, Mitchell. Go to bed now. You are still not strong.

Me: But Aaron, I...

Aaron: I wasn't asking you but telling you to go to your bedroom.

Me: Fine, daddy

Aaron: Good. I'll take you to your bedroom... Ohhh, Mr Louis is arrested.

Tso: Delano's father?

Aaron: Yes.

Tso: What happened?

...

Aaron started telling us everything. Trust me when I say we were just happy that Mr Louis got arrested. That man is a very cruel man. I wish that the same thing could happen to Mr Anderson. That man turned my own husband against me. He turned my own husband into a monster. Ohh well, Aaron carried me to my bedroom and joined me in bed. He then spoke.

...

Aaron: Do you still think about him?

Me: Who?

Aaron: Your husband.

Me: Do you want the truth?

Aaron: Yes, I do.

Me: Well, I never think about him. I actually hate him. I never thought that I'd say this but I mean it.

Aaron: It's understandable.

Me: Yeah, I guess so... But, can I ask?

Aaron: Yes, you can.

Me: Why are you so good to my sisters and I? Is there something you are going to want in return?

Aaron: Yes.

Me: I thought as much. What is it?

Aaron: I want you “not” to hate men and say that all men are the same. There's nothing like that.

Me: Well, I know that not all men are the same.

Aaron: And not every marriage breaks a person, don't give up in life.

Me: Wow, you are such a great guy. Thank you.

Aaron: It's a pleasure.

...

I hugged him and kissed his cheek. He looked at me for such a long time. I smiled and spoke.

...

Me: Why are you looking at me like that?

Aaron: I see pain in your eyes. Don't you want to go for counseling?

Me: No, I am fine.

Aaron: Are you sure?

Me: Yes dear., you've done a lot for me, I don't want to trouble you further.

Aaron: You won't be troubling me.

Me: Talking to you helped me a lot, hey. I don't need counseling.

Aaron: Okay honey, I understand.

Me: Thank you. So, when are we seeing your girlfriend?

Aaron: Can we please not talk about my girlfriend?

Me: Sorry.

Aaron: It's okay.

...

Aaron is simply the best. He make my sisters and I feel safe and protected. We used to fear our husbands so much but now that Aaron is in our lives, we feel much better. We are actually stronger than before. We are brave and not scared of our husbands anymore.

...

[Delano]

My own wife betrayed me. Now my father is in jail because of her. She'll pay for everything. I know that Lungile and Trey can't also see their wives. Everything about us was in the papers. We are known as the most abusive men in the country. That lawyer who helped our wives should die. Today Lungile and Trey came

to my house because we thought that we should destroy our wives and the lawyer.

...

Me: Thanks for coming, Gents.

Trey: It's a pleasure.

Lungi: Trey, what happened to you and Mish? Everyone thought that you were the best couple.

Trey: Please, let's not go there.

Lungi: Fine... so what's the plan?

Me: Aaron should die.

Trey: That's true and my father will help us.

Lungi: I actually wanted to change for my wife but now she awakened the devil in me. She'll pay for everything.

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: We should really make them pay.

Trey: Yes, we should but Aaron's house is secured.

Me: I have a plan to get our wives out of that house.

Lungi: What plan?

Me: Let's kidnap Malebo... In that way our wives will search for their mother.

Trey: But they don't get along.

Me: I know but Malebo is their mother, they won't wish bad for their own mother. They'll be worried.

Lungi: I agree with, Delano.

Trey: Gents, I don't know if your plan will work but let's try it.

Me: Yes, let's try it.

Lungi: So when are we going to put our plan into action?

Me: How about tomorrow night?

Trey: Tomorrow night is perfect.

Lungi: Yeah, it is.

Trey: So Gents... I will see you tomorrow. I have to go to the airport now.

Me: But why?

Trey: My father is there, he just arrived in Johannesburg.

Lungi: Okay, I'll also go out with you. I have important work to do.

Trey: Cool.

...

Trey and Lungile said their goodbyes and left.

...

[Tremaine / Trey]

I got to the airport and found my dad waiting for me. We got in my car and left. On our way to my house, we spoke.

...

Dad: Trey, how did you let a girl disrespect you like that?

Me: Father, if it wasn't for the lawyer by the name Aaron, none of this would've happened.

Dad: No son, you are now a weakling. You need to clear your name. I lost so many business clients because of your scandal.

Me: I am sorry, dad.

Dad: Sorry is not enough. You need to do something before we lose everything, you need t...

Me: I hear you, dad. I hear you.

Dad: Keep quiet. I am still talking.

Me: Sorry, go on.

Dad: You need to get another wife, a girl from a royal family.



Me: What?? But why?

Dad: Because I say so.

Me: No dad, you have to tell me everything.

Dad: I'll tell you when the time is right.

Me: So are you saying that I should also sign the divorce papers?

Dad: No.

Me: So how am I going to get married?

Dad: Leave that one to me.

Me: Uhm... Okay, dad.

Dad: Good.

Me: So how come you came alone and not with your royal guards?

Dad: Because I need to make you a man again. I don't want anyone else around us.

Me: I am a man, already.

Dad: A weakling. You let a girl tarnish your name.

Me: Look, don't call me a weakling, I am not a weakling. Mitchell just outsmarted me with the help of a very smart lawyer.

Dad: I need to talk to Mitchell.

Me: About?

Dad: About everything.

Me: Why?

Dad: So that she can get back with you.

Me: You are really confusing me right now. One moment you want me to get married again then the next moment you want me to get Mitchell back. I am confused.

Dad: (Laughs) Of course you are, but you'll understand very soon.

Me: What are you up to?

Dad: I'll teach you how to roll in this game.

Me: Whatever, dad.

...

We finally got to my house. I really wonder what dad is up to. He began dialling Mish's number.

...

To be continued...

7

[Mitchell / Mish]

As I was in the bathroom taking a long bath, my phone rang. It was a number I do not know so I just answered.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Me: Yes?

Caller: Mitchell Anderson, It's me.

Me: Excuse me, I am not Anderson.

Caller: Well you are still married to my son.

...

I froze. Where on earth did Mr Anderson get my new number? I changed my simcard. What does he want from me?

...

Caller: Are you there?

Me: What do you want from me?

Caller: I want you to get back with my son.

Me: But why?

Caller: Because he loves you.

Me: Old man, listen here... Your son almost killed me so I am done with him. You've never liked me so leave me alone... you can marry your son, I don't care.

Caller: Mitchell, don't insult me.

Me: I am not insulting you. Stay away from me. I'm not anyone's punching bag.

Caller: Mitchell, my son is sorry for everything.

Me: And what about you?

Caller: I am also sorry.

Me: Are you also sorry for turning Tremaine against me? Are you?

Caller: Yes I am.

Me: When I was in the US with your son, what did you do?

Caller: I don't remember.

Me: Okay fine, bye.

Caller: Okay Okay, Fine... I remember.

Me: What did you do?

Caller: I treated your like a slave.

Me: Am I a slave?

Caller: No you are not.

Me: Good. You have all your answers. I'll never take Trey back. I hate him. I hate you. I hate your wife and I hate my mother... And with passion.

Caller: Hate is such a big word.

Me: I know. You are the one who taught me how to hate. You just hate me for nothing. I did nothing to you but the hatred you have for me is bigger than your head.

Caller: Are you saying that I've got a big head?

...

I started laughing. He then spoke.

...

Caller: What's funny?

Me: You... Old man... You!!!

Caller: Mitchell, You have to get back with my son... please.

Me: I will not... I am happy.

Caller: With the lawyer?

Me: What are you trying to say?

Caller: Are you sleeping with the lawyer?

Me: Should I sleep with you?... Ohh, of course you've always wanted to sleep with me... maybe the reason why you hate me is because I always refused to sleep with you.

Caller: Enough.

Me: One day your son will know the real you... You are a devil.

Caller: Bye.

Me: Where did you get my number?

Caller: Does it matter?

Me: Fine... Bye.

Caller: Mitchell?

Me: What?

Caller: Please think about everything I said to you.

Me: No need to... I made up my mind.

Caller: Please.

Me: Bye.

Caller: Okay, bye.

...

He hung up. I wonder why he wants me to get back with Trey. Why? Could it be that he wants something from me? But what is it?

...

[Mr Anderson]

Mitchell is just being stubborn. If she doesn't get back with my son I'll be doomed.

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">...

Trey: Dad, what's going on? What did she say?

Me: She's being stubborn.

Trey: Do you blame her?

Me: Hey... Why are you being kind now?

Trey: Dad, because I love her. You also know that I love her.

Me: Don't be a fool, what do you know about love?

Trey: I am 26 years Old. I know a lot about love and Mitchell was the one who showed me love... she taught me how to love.

...

I got angry and threw in a punch. He looked at me and spoke.

...

Trey: Dad, did you just punch me?

Me: And I will do it again. How can you talk to me like that?

Trey: Look... I am sorry, I didn't mean to upset you.

Me: It's okay. Now show me to my bedroom.

...

He showed me to my bedroom. We sat down in my bedroom and spoke.

...

Me: So will you get married again?

Trey: But why?

Me: Please do it for me.

Trey: Dad, what are you up to?

Me: Nothing.

Trey: So why do you want me to get married? And why do you want me to have Mitchell back? I am confused, dad.

Me: You'll understand everything very soon. Don't you trust me?

Trey: I do.



Me: So?

Trey: Fine. I'll get married again and I'll try to get back with Mitchell.

Me: Good. Now you are talking.

Trey: Where did you get Mitchell's new number?

Me: It doesn't matter.

Trey: Can I have it then?

Me: Of course you can.

...

[Lungile / Lungi]

It is finally the next day and our plan worked perfectly. We managed to kidnap Malebo and took her to my house. She then spoke.

...

Malebo: Boys, what's this all about?

Lano: Didn't you see how your daughters humiliated us?

Malebo: I did and I am very sorry.

Trey: Sorry ain't enough, call your daughter now... here's the phone, I'll put her on loudspeaker.

...

Trey gave Malebo his phone and she called Mitchell.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Mish: Hello?

Malebo: Baby, it's me... Your mother.

Mish: Heyyyy Woman, I don't have a mother... what is it that you want from me and why are you using Trey's phone to call me?

Malebo: Baby, you have to help me... please... I don't know what they want from me.

...

Delano spoke.

...

Lano: Listen here, Mitchell... If you don't want your mother to die, then come see us with your sisters and don't come with the police.

Mish: Ohh, I see. You planned this, right? Nice one, Malebo. Nice one.

Malebo: No baby, I did not plan this.

Mish: You did.

Malebo: I did not, you have to believe me.. they even tied me to a chair.

Mish: That's nice.

Me: Listen here, Mitchell... If you don't come to my house with your sisters, we'll be forced to end your mother's life.

Mish: Good riddance.

...

Mitchell then hung up. I couldn't believe it. Did she just say good riddance? Malebo started crying.

...

To be continued...

8

[Kitso / Tso]

I walked into the kitchen and realized that Mish was talking on the phone before I came in. I sat down and spoke.

...

Me: Hey sister, who were you talking to?

Mish: No one important.

Me: Are you sure?

Mish: Yes, I am sure.

Me: Oh, okay then.

Mish: Sister, I am financially embarrassed. Should I go back to work?

Me: So that your foolish husband can get to see you? Hell No.

Mish: So where am I going to get money?

Me: What exactly do you want to do with money?

Mish: So many things.

Me: Ask your lawyer for some advice.

Mish: No... it's okay.

Me: Can I ask?

Mish: Yes ask.

Me: Is there something going on between you and Aaron?

Mish: No, why?

Me: I've seen the way he looks at you.

Mish: Well I haven't seen anything... And Aaron is way older than me.

Me: Come on. He's just 30 years old.

Mish: Exactly. I am just 21 years old. My last stop is 28.

Me: Age is just a number, you know.

Mish: Gosh, what's this all about? Aaron is taken and I am not ready for any relationship.

Me: I see.

...

Mish's phone rang. She just checked the caller ID and switched off her phone. I spoke.

...

Me: Ke mang? (Who is it?)

Mish: Hase motho (No one)

Me: What are you hiding from me?

Mish: I think that you are getting on my nerves now.

Me: Sorry.

Mish: Where's Aaron and Nolly?

Me: They went out to buy something to eat.

Mish: And why did they leave us behind?

Me: I don't know.

Mish: I see.

Me: Mish?

Mish: Yeah?

Me: I need a one night stand, I am so horny.

Mish: (Laughs) The things you are telling me though. TMI, Sis.  
TMI!!

Me: I am serious hey.

Mish: So what's your plan?

Me: Let's go out tonight.

Mish: Where?

Me: I don't know. Let's go party.

Mish: Our lives are still in danger, you know?

Me: But we've got the bodyguards.

Mish: But still, our...

Me: No Mish, I'll go without you then.

Mish: Kitso, No.

...

I just got up and went to my bedroom. Tonight I'll go out and no one will stop me. It was now 18:00 when I left the house.

Mish ran after me.

...

Mish: Tso, you can't go out. We are still not safe.

Me: Mitchell, leave me alone.

Mish: Mr Anderson is in Johannesburg. You know how he is.

Me: But he's not my father in-law.

Mish: Do you think he cares? Our husbands are still after our lives, they are the ones who called me.

Me: I'm going with the bodyguards.

Mish: Gosh, I am 21 years old. You are 23 years old. I am the youngest... with brains and you are just a fool.

Me: Insulting me won't stop me from going out. Bye.

...

I got in the car with two bodyguards and left. Just when we got out of the gate, this other plastic girl walked in. Well I don't care, I am going to enjoy myself tonight.

...

[Mitchell / Mish]

I really don't get why Kitso is being stubborn. I tried to stop her but she didn't listen. Just when the gate opened, I saw this other plastic girl walking inside. Mhmm, you can tell that she's fake. You can tell that she's a slutty snob. I waited for her to come closer. She finally came to me and spoke.

...

Her: Hey there. My name is Lexy. What are you doing in my boyfriend's house?

Me: I am not inside a house.

Her: You know what I mean.

Me: Who's your boyfriend?

Her: Aaron, babe.

...

I couldn't help it but laugh. Her snobbish voice was just funny. Damn... this girl is such a plastic. How did Aaron end up with someone like Lexy? I am disappointed. She then spoke.



...

Her: Why are you laughing at me?

Me: Can you speak proper?

Her: Are you trying to insult me?

Me: No... Let's go inside.

Her: Cool.

...

She led the way. I burst into laughter again. Her walk was also funny. She stopped and looked at me. I then spoke.

...

Me: No, no, no. I am just in a good mood.

Her: Uhm... Why?

Me: Is it wrong?

Her: Nah... anyway where's my man?

Me: He'll be back very soon.

Her: Ayyyt.

Me: Aha.

...

We finally got inside the house. We sat together in the kitchen. She was busy painting her loooong nails. I spoke.

...

Me: So how old are you?

Her: I am 20 years old, why?

Me: Just asking.

Her: Okay and how old are you?

Me: I am 21 years old.

Her: Nice.

Me: So would you like something to drink?

Her: Yeah, please... juice is fine for me.

Me: Okay, the fridge is behind you.

Her: Come on, doll. Won't you help me out?

Me: I am not a maid.

Her: So why did you ask me if I would like something to drink?

Me: I also don't know.

Her: Who exactly are you?

Me: I am Mitchell, Aaron's friend. I stay here with Aaron, and my two sisters.

Her: What?? You stay in my house?

Me: It's not your house and yes we stay here with Aaron and he's so good to us.

Her: Are you sleeping with my man?

Me: Everyday.

Her: Excuse me? You and your two sisters?

Me: Yes... sharing is caring, right?

Her: How dare you say that?

Me: You asked me, babe.

...

She got angry and started shouting at me. I laughed so much and walked away. She followed me. It was so much fun. I went back to the kitchen and that's when Aaron and Nolly walked in. A hot slap is what Aaron got.

...

Aaron: And then?

Lexy: You've been ignoring my calls so that you can sleep with three sisters. How disgusting is that?

Aaron: Sleep with three sisters? Are you crazy?

Lexy: Mitchell told me everything.

...

Aaron looked at me and spoke.

...

Aaron: Mish, why did you lie?

Me: I was just pulling her leg.

Aaron: Is that why she's acting up? Tell me, Mish... why did you open for her?

Me: I didn't. When Kitso went out, the plas... Uhm, your girlfriend walked in.

Aaron: I see. Are you okay though?

Me: Yeah I am.

...

Aaron hugged me and kissed my forehead. This guy is weird. Why is he hugging me and not the girlfriend? He then spoke.

...

Aaron: Did you say that Kitso went out?

Me: Yeah.

Nolly: But we are still not safe.

Me: That's what I told her.

Nolly: Where did she go?

Me: I don't know... she said she's horny.

Aaron: I don't follow. What does that have to do with her going out?

...

I decided to tell Aaron and Nolly everything. Aaron got so worried and spoke.

...

Aaron: Something bad is going to come out of this.

Me: Something like what?

Aaron: She might get kidnapped.

Me: Minus one problem.

...

Aaron and Nolly gave me a very scary look so I laughed and spoke.

...

Me: I am kidding. I don't wish anything bad to happen to Kitso but she really knows how to irritate people. I tried stopping her but she didn't listen to me.

Nolly: Kitso is too stubborn.

Lexy: Helloooo?????? I am still standing here. Why's everyone not giving me attention?

Aaron: (Shouting) Shut Up, Lexy. Just shut up!!!!

...

For a moment Aaron scared us. We've never seen him angry or shouting. He then held my hand and walked out of the house with me. Gosh, where is he taking me to?

...

To be continued...

9

[Aaron]

I got in my car with Mish and the driver drove off. The bodyguards' cars followed us. We must look for Kitso before it's too late. I really don't know why Lexy had to show up at my house. I was sitting with Mish at the back. I then spoke.

...

Me: What do you think of Lexy?

Mish: (Laughs) Do you really want the truth?

Me: Yes please.

Mish: I see a fake, slutty snob.

Me: Thanks.

Mish: Where are we going?

Me: We are going to look for Tso.

Mish: Okay.

Me: Are you feeling cold?

Mish: Yeah.

...

I gave Mish my jacket and spoke.

...

Me: Come closer, I'll wrap you around my arms.

Mish: Are you sure?

Me: Yeah, I am.

Mish: Okay, thank you.

...

She came closer. I couldn't help but kiss her forehead. She looked at me and smiled. All of a sudden a very strong force pulled our lips closer to one another. We closed our eyes as we shared a very passionate kiss. I made her sit on my lap. My blood was literally boiling up. I was damn horny. I slid my hand underneath her dress and rubbed her cookie. She started breathing so heavily, and made my blood boil even more. She then spoke.

...

Mish: Let's go back home, please.

Me: Your sister.

Mish: Let them go look for her. You and I must go back.

Me: Okay then.

...



I ordered my men to go look for Kitso and asked the driver to take us back home. My shirt was already unbuttoned so when we got to my house, Lexy asked me a lot of questions but I picked Mish up and headed to my bedroom. I then locked the door. My bedroom has got soundproof so I just put Mish in bed and got on top of her. Things got a bit out of hand and steamy. It was heating up in the room. I managed to undress myself and Mish. Making love to her felt so great. After a very long and hot intimacy with her, we just cuddled and had a chat.

...

Me: Mitchell?

Mish: Yes?

Me: I am in love with you.

...

Mish looked at me and got up. She didn't say anything so I was lost. She started getting dressed and left my bedroom. I also got dressed and followed her. The irritating Lexy also saw us and followed us to Mish's bedroom.

...

Lexy: What were the two of you doing, Aaron?

Me: We were making lo...

Mish: We were planning on how to get my sister home. Is that a problem?

Lexy: Yes, it is. You've been in Aaron's bedroom for 1 hour, five minutes.

Me: You were even checking time. Wow.

...

Lexy started shouting at Mish and I. Nolly also came to Mish's bedroom. She then spoke.

...

Nolly: Guys, can you please stop arguing? They have Kitso.

Me: Who?

Nolly: Trey, Delano, Lungile and Mr Anderson. They have Kitso and Malebo. I don't know how they got my phone number but they called me.

Me: Dammit... So what do they want?

Nolly: They want to see Mish and I.

Me: Never! It's not going to happen.

Mish: Aaron, this is my fault. I shouldn't have told you that we must come back home.

Me: But the situation we were in forced us to come back home.  
We had to respect the driver.

Lexy: Aar...

Me: Lexy, don't call my name. Go home. I am very busy.

26, 26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Lexy: But...

Me: Security!!!

...

Two security guys did not waste time. They came inside. I then spoke to them.

...

Me: Take this girl out of my house and I never want to see her in my house again. Do you get it?

Mish: Wow, you are just like Trey, Delano and Lungile. Why are you doing this to your girlfriend?

Me: (Yelling) SHUT UP, Mitchell.... Security, take Lexy out!!

...

Lexy tried fighting with the securities but they managed to throw her out of my house. Nolly then spoke.

...

Nolly: But Aaron, it is almost 20:00. You can't just throw out your girlfriend like that.

Me: Well... Too Late.

Mish: Wow, Aaron... Wow.

...

I got so angry and raised my voice.

...

Me: Girls, please leave me alone... You don't know anything about my relationship with Lexy. Please stay out of it.

...

I then grabbed my car keys and walked out of the house. I really needed fresh air.

...

[Bonolo / Nolly]

I've never seen Aaron this angry. He left the house and I was now left with Mish. Goodness, the love bites that I saw on Mish's neck were a lot. They were also super red. I went closer to her and spoke to her.

...

Me: Mish?

Mish: Keng? (What?)

Me: Did you sleep with Aaron?

Mish: No.

Me: But the lovebites?

Mish: Please get out of my bedroom.

Me: I'm not going to judge you. Just tell me.

Mish: I didn't sleep with Aaron. Please leave me alone.

...

Mish was so emotional. She was crying. I couldn't understand anything that was happening. I hugged her and she let it all out. I then spoke.

...

Me: Shhh. Everything will be fine.

Mish: Nooo. Nothing will be fine. Everything is wrong.

Me: What is wrong? Talk to me.

Mish: No, sister. Nooo.

Me: What happened?

Mish: Nothing.

...

She broke off the hug and wiped away her tears.

...

Mish: Let me ask you something.

Me: Yes, ask.

Mish: Are we going to see them?

Me: Who?

Mish: Our husbands?

Me: I'll get back to you.

Mish: Fine... I'll go take a shower.

Me: Fine.

...

Mish walked to the bathroom. I wonder what happened between Mish and Aaron. Mish is really not okay. God, how am I going to save Malebo and Kitso? Should Mish and I do as our husbands want? But why do they want to see us? And where the hell is Aaron? Let me call Trey.

...

To be continued...

10

[Tremaine / Trey]

My phone started ringing and It happened to be Bonolo calling. I answered and put her on loudspeaker.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Me: What?

Nolly: Tremaine... Please don't hurt my mother and sister.

Me: Are you coming with my wife?

Nolly: I'm still thinking about it.

...

A hot slap is what Malebo got from my father. And he made sure that Bonolo hears everything. Bonolo then started crying and spoke.

...

Nolly: Trey, please.

Lungi: Come on, baby... Just come here with your stubborn sister and we'll let everyone go.

Nolly: But why do you want to see us?

Lungi: Aren't you my wife?

Nolly: But I signed the divorce papers.

Lungi: And I didn't sign. You are still my wife. Mitchell is still Trey's wife and Kitso is still Delano's wife.

Nolly: Okay fine, we'll come.

Me: When?

Nolly: Tomorrow morning.

Lano: And you better not bring the cops along.

Lungi: Or Aaron, the lawyer.

Nolly: We won't. I promise.

Me: Good.

Mr Anderson: Your pretty sister's face still looks good but if you don't show up tomorrow, her face will be bruised.

Nolly: Yes sir, I will come.

Mr Anderson: Don't forget to come with my daughter in-law.

Nolly: I won't... I promise.

Mr Anderson: Good.

Me: Bye, Bonolo.

Nolly: Bye.



Lungi: Love you baby.

...

Bonolo just hung up. I must say that Kitso did us a great job by leaving Aaron's house. When we found her at the club she was so drunk and didn't realize that we are the ones who took her - Foolish girl. This is only the beginning. With my father around, everything will go smooth. Everything will go as planned.

...

[Mitchell / Mish]

I got done in the bathroom and met up with Nolly downstairs. I cried so much in the bathroom because Aaron reminded me of Trey. I remember it like it was yesterday. Trey had decorated the room so beautifully. We were not an item by then. I spent the night with him. It was so nice. We were in love but not yet together. We made love, and it was so great. His Cologne drove me crazy. His lips - eyes - smile and body also drove me crazy. Most importantly the way he made love to me drove me crazy. He truly knew how to satisfy me. Well just after making love, Trey spoke to me; "Mish, I am in love with you". Trust me when I say that he melted my heart. I was soooo happy and kissed him. But today when Aaron told me that he is in love with me immediately after making love to me, I got so angry all thanks

to Trey. I am really trying to be happy but it's not easy. My past will always haunt me. Nolly spoke to me.

...

Nolly: Mish, we have to go see our husbands tomorrow morning.

Me: I signed divorce papers so I am single.

Nolly: Don't you want to save our mother and sister?

Me: I don't have a mother.

Nolly: Okay fine. I understand that you don't like Malebo but tell me, don't you want to save your own sister?

Me: Sex will help her. She went out there because of sex, so sex will help her.

Nolly: Are you serious, Mitchell?

Me: I think that I am not smiling so I guess I am serious.

Nolly: Mish, wow... your own sister?

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: Look, Nolly... I am not being heartless or anything but Kitso brought this upon herself.

Nolly: So are you not going to go with me?

Me: Yes I won't go with you.

Nolly: But we are needed.

Me: Why? What is it that they want from us?

Nolly: Let's go and find out tomorrow.

Me: Are you stupid? They'll kill us. I am not going with you.

Nolly: If you don't go with me, they'll kill our sister and mother.

Me: Minus two problems.

...

A very hot slap is what I got from Nolly. Me and my temper, though. I returned the slap. Nolly spoke.

...

Nolly: Did you just slap me?

Me: I am sorry.

Nolly: You disgust me.

Me: I said that I am sorry, Nols.

Nolly: If you are really sorry, then you'll go with me tomorrow.

Me: That won't happen.

Nolly: What kind of a sister are you? You are just like Malebo.

Me: Don't you dare compare me to Malebo, I'm nothing like her. I don't want to die. Why do you see me as a bad person? The last time I saw Trey, he almost killed me.

Nolly: I know that and I am sorry.

Me: Nols, I am going to be a bad sister this time. I am sorry... I'm not going with you.

...

With what I said, I went to my bedroom. I know that people might say that I am heartless but the truth is I am not. I am not going to get a beating from Trey and his father all because of Kitso and Malebo. There are drivers here, there are bodyguards, there are securities, there are garden boys, so if Kitso really wanted a one night stand, why didn't she pick one guy around here? I am so not going to get a beating from Trey and Trey's father because of Kitso. I almost died the last time I saw Trey and I was left brutally injured next to the road. I survived because of Aaron but who will save me this time? Those cruel people will definitely make sure that I die right in front of them. I refuse to go with Nolly. Let everyone call me names, I don't care.

...

[Aaron]

I was at a friend's place so I thought that I should go back to my house so that I can apologize to Nolly and Mish. When I got to my house, I found Nolly crying in the living room. I sat down next to her and spoke.

...

Me: I am sorry, Bonolo. I didn't mean to act up and scare you and Mish.

Nolly: No. You did nothing wrong.

Me: So why are you crying?

Nolly: Because Mish is being heartless. She doesn't want to go with me to see our husbands tomorrow so that we can save our mother and sister.

Me: But you know that you can't go there. It's not safe.

Nolly: So what should I do, Aaron?

Me: Let's involve the cops.

Nolly: Nooooo. We will not.

Me: Why?

Nolly: Because that's wrong.

Me: But Bonol...

...

She got angry and started shouting at me.

...

Nolly: Aaron, just stay out of this. You are not my husband or my father so just shut up. I don't need your help.

...

I really don't like it when people are shouting at me all because of stupidity so I was fuming. I got up from the couch and went upstairs to my bedroom. What is wrong with people? You help them out and they spit in your face. It's really irritating me. Since Nolly does not need my help, then it's fine. She can do whatever she wants. I am tired of this bullshit.

...

To be continued...

11

[Delano / Lano]

It was finally the next morning. Nolly showed up but she was alone. She greeted and sat down.

...

Me: Where's Mitchell?

Nolly: She was not feeling well so she didn't come with me.

Lungi: Bullshit... You are lying.

Nolly: I am not.

Mr Anderson: We said that you should come with my daughter in-law so stop lying to us.

Trey: Bonolo, where's my wife?

Nolly: She's really sick.

...

Lungile slapped Bonolo and she fell off the couch and started bleeding. He then went down on his knees and held Bonolo's face with his hands. He then painfully squashed Bonolo's cheeks with his one hand and spoke.

...

Lungi: Baby, I hate it when you lie to me and right now you are lying.

Nolly: (Crying) What do you want from us? Why can't you set us free?

Lungi: Baby... Where's Mitchell?

Nolly: She refused to come.

...

Lungile slapped Bonolo again and spoke.

...

Lungi: Why?

Nolly: She's scared of Trey.

Lungi: You are the elder sister so you were supposed to bring her here, no matter what.

Nolly: I really tried... but at least I am here.

Mr Anderson: Well you are here to stay. We won't let any of you go until we get to see my daughter in-law.

Nolly: What do you want from Mitchell?

Mr Anderson: How is it your business?

Nolly: Please let me see my sister and my mother.



Lungi: Not so fast. I will teach you a lesson.

...

Lungile started unzipping his pants. I thought that he wouldn't do it in front of us but he did. He tore Bonolo's clothes and started enjoying her. Bonolo was crying but I guess she's being taught a lesson. Lungile is a real man. I wouldn't call it rape because Bonolo is his wife. He then began hitting it faster and rough. Bonolo was now helpless. Lungile got done and got dressed. He then spoke.

...

Lungi: Baby, go upstairs to our bedroom. Your clothes are still there. Don't take long.

Mr Anderson: (Laughs) You are a real man, Lungile... That's how a man should discipline his wife.

...

Lungile smiled and sipped on wine. Bonolo was hurt but she still got up from the floor and made her way upstairs. We all laughed. Being a man of power is the greatest thing ever. My wife, Kitso is next. I've learned a lot from Lungile so I'll also go and enjoy my wife.

...

[Mitchell /Mish]

I woke up in the morning only to find that Nolly had left the house. I ran to Aaron's bedroom and thank God, he was still in bed. I greeted him and sat down next to him. I then spoke.

...

Me: Aaron?

Aaron: Yes?

Me: I am sorry for what happened last night.

Aaron: You mean that you are sorry for rejecting me?

Me: Aaron, I didn't reject you. You have a girlfriend who loves you.

Aaron: How do you know that she loves me?

Me: Listen, Aaron. Bonolo is gone.

Aaron: Okay.

Me: Huh?? Okay??

Aaron: Yeah... what do you want me to say?

Me: Aren't you going to help me find her?

Aaron: No.

Me: Why?

Aaron: Because she said that she doesn't need my help.

Me: She didn't mean it.

Aaron: Sorry Mish but if you are here to talk about Bonolo then leave my bedroom.

Me: Aren't you going to work?

Aaron: No.

Me: Okay. Can I join you in bed?

Aaron: Sure.

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: Thank you.

...

I joined Aaron in bed and started talking.

...

Me: Aaron, do you think that I am a bad sister?

Aaron: And why are you asking?

Me: Please answer me.

Aaron: You are not a bad sister and sometimes it's like you are the eldest. Sorry to say this but sometimes Bonolo and Kitso are way too foolish... none of this would have happened if...

Me: It's okay. I'll find a way to help them.

Aaron: Are you going to your husband?

Me: No... Never!!!

Aaron: So how are you going to help them?

Me: I think that I am very valuable to Mr Anderson. There's something that he wants from me so I have to find that thing... it's a must.

Aaron: And where are you going to start?

Me: I need your help... please Aaron.

Aaron: Okay fine. I'll help you.

Me: Thank you.

Aaron: You are welcome.

Me: Aaron, I want to tell you something.

Aaron: Go ahead.

Me: I am not using you. You've done a lot for me and I really appreciate it. Thank you so much.

Aaron: It's okay.

Me: And thank you for loving me. I know that I am a very complicated person with a complicated life but you still managed to tell me that you are in love with me. I appreciate that.

Aaron: Can we not talk about that, please?

Me: Fine. And I am sorry.

...

We both kept quiet. It was so awkward in the room.

...

[Kitso / Tso]

I was so surprised to see Nolly being brought to the basement to join Malebo and I. Her face had bruises. Lungile threw her inside and just left. There's nothing useful to fight with in the basement so they didn't tie us. I went closer to Nolly and spoke.

...

Me: Nols, What happened?

Nolly: You Happened!!!

Me: What do you mean?

Nolly: Get away from me before I beat you up.

Me: But Nol...

Nolly: (Yelling) Shut up, Kitso. Shut up and get away from me!!!!

Malebo: Girls, please calm do...

Me: (Yelling) Shut up, Malebo... everything is your fault. You've always favored your in-laws but not us so keep quiet.

Malebo: Girls, I am sorry.

Nolly: I hate the two of you. I should've listened to Mish because she's always making sense. I was rude to Aaron because of you people. I shouldn't have co...

Me: What's done is done. Now let's work on how we are going to get out of here.

Nolly: Foolish girl... This is my house and I know that we can't get out of this room unless we have the keys.

Malebo: There has to be a way out.

Nolly: Are you saying that I don't know my house?

Malebo: No, I am not saying that.

Nolly: Then shut up.

Me: So are we going to be here forever?

Nolly: The only person who can help us is Aaron... But the question is how?

Me: He's a very powerful man and I am talking about legally so let's hope that our husbands will get arrested very soon

Nolly: And your mother.

Me: Malebo?

Nolly: Yes. She's a very bad person.

Me: Nolly just calm down.

Nolly: And just shut up. Lungile forced himself on me. He was so rough and he really hurt me... in their presence.

Malebo: Whose presence?

Nolly: The monkeys' presence... Duh!!! I'm obviously talking about your in-laws.

Malebo: I am so sorry, my daughter.

Nolly: Please don't call me your daughter. You are dead to me.

...

To be continued...

12

[Kitso / Tso]

Malebo started crying. We actually did not give a damn. She brought this upon herself. Nolly and I sat in bed and spoke.

...

Nolly: Kitso, I heard that you left the house with the bodyguards. What happened to them?

Me: Do you want the truth?

Nolly: Yes, I do.

Me: Well, I don't know. I was so drunk. When I was carried to the car, I thought that I was carried by the bodyguards but when I got sober I realized that I was not with the bodyguards but our husbands.

Nolly: You are so foolish.

Me: I am sorry.

Nolly: But what happened to the bodyguards? They never went back to Aaron's house.

Me: I have no idea, sister.

Nolly: Are you aware that I am here because of you? Are you aware that I got beaten up because of you? Are you aware that I got raped because of you?



Me: Yes... I am, and I am very sorry.

Nolly: Let it go. I'll be fine

...

[Mr Anderson]

I was sitting outside when my phone rang. It was an American number. I just answered the phone. I already know who it is - The guy who manages my business accounts.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Me: Anderson, hello?

Caller: Mr Anderson... uhm... Your employees are on strike.

Me: But why?

Caller: Because you have not paid them.

Me: But I'll pay them.

Caller: You have been saying that for the past four months.

Me: Give me few days. My daughter in-law will give me all the money I want.

Caller: That's what you've been saying ever since your son's scandal.

Me: Just relax, okay?

Caller: Listen sir. There's this other company by the name ...  
Uhm... I forgot the name but they want to sue you.

Me: For what?

Caller: For a tender that went wrong.

Me: How is it my business? A tender or a contract?

Caller: I don't know. Between the two.

Me: Next time get your story straight because that's what I am paying you for.

Caller: No sir... You have not paid me so don't sa...

Me: SHUT UP!!!

Caller: Sorry sir.

Me: I'll get back to you soon. Tell everyone that I'll pay them soon.

Caller: Yes boss. Look I'll call you later.

Me: Bye.

...

I hung up. I was so angry. I am going to lose everything if I don't get Mitchell on my side. God, what do I do? I really have to start

being nice to Mish. But first, I am going to have to release her sisters and mother. I went inside and spoke to the guys.

...

Me: Gents, listen... We need to release them.

Trey: Who?

Me: Malebo and her daughters.

Trey: But why, dad?

Me: Because I say so.

Lano: But sir, that wasn't part of the plan.

Me: Well I've changed the plan.

Lungi: Trey... please talk to your father... those girls defamed us and we can't just let them go.

Me: We can.

Lano: We can't.

Trey: Dad, we can't.

...

A voice came from the door's direction; "Listen to your son, nobody will leave this place." We all turned around and looked at the person who was speaking. There he was, standing at the

door. Why is he here? We never liked one another so why is he here and who opened up for him?

...

[Delano / Lano]

I was so excited to see my father. I wonder how he got out of jail. I ran to him and hugged him. He then greeted everyone and sat down.

...

Mr A: Louis... What do you want?

Me: Do you know one another?

Mr Louis: Yes we do.

Me: How?

Mr A: Your father here slept with my wife.

Mr Louis: Didn't you also sleep with my wife? You actually raped her.

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Mr A: You also raped my wife.

...

We couldn't understand anything. My father and Mr Anderson started arguing. All of a sudden they physically fought. We tried separating them but we also got punches from them so we gave up and just sat down. Just when they were fighting, Mish showed up. I was so shocked. I spoke.

...

Me: Mish?

Trey: Mish?

Lungi: Mish?

Mish: Yes... Foooooooools!!!

...

My father and Trey's father stopped fighting. They were so shocked. They sat down and leaned against the wall. Well that's how tired they were because of the fight. Mr Anderson then spoke.

...

Mr A: My daughter, you??

Me: Don't call me your daughter. What is it that you want from me?

...

Trey went closer to Mish and hugged her. You can tell that Trey loves Mish but his father is controlling him. He also had teary eyes. Mish pushed him away and spoke.

...

Mish: Why did you hug me?

Trey: I really missed you.

Mish: Yeah right.

...

My father got up from the floor and grabbed Mish's hand very tight. He then spoke.

...

Mr Louis: Boys, help me.. We have to lock her up as well.

Lungi: Yes, Sure sure.

Me: Great. Let's lock her up.

Trey: (Yelling) Enough!!!

Me: What is it, Trey?

Trey: Let go of her. Leave her alone or else I'll kill all of you.

Mr Louis: Tremaine, what are you really saying?

Trey: She's still my wife and I still love her. Leave her alone.

...

Trey then pulled Mish away from all of us. Mr Anderson got up from the floor and spoke.

...

Mr A: That's good, my son. We are not going to lock up my daughter in-law.

Me: But why?

Mr A: Because I say so.

Mish: Crazy people, you are going down... where are my sisters?

Trey: I'll unlock the basement door for them.

Mish: Do that.

...

Trey ran to the basement and opened up for Malebo and her daughters. Things got out of hand when our men and Mish's men started shooting at one another... real guns were taken out. Where did Mish get these men from? They seem brutal. We all fought for our lives but Mish managed to run out of the house. I actually saw her running into Aaron's arms. Bloody bastard... so Aaron is behind everything? These brutal men are

not Mish's men but Aaron's men. Malebo got shot. That's when we all stopped firing shots.

...

[Aaron]

Mish and I went to Lungile's house. The security guy opened the gate for us. Well the cops were surrounding the house so I guess we were safe. Mish came running outside when everyone started shooting. She ran into my arms and I took her to the car.

...

Me: Mish, what happened?

Mish: I think they shot someone.

Me: Who?

Mish: I don't know. I just heard someone screaming.

Me: They will get arrested. The cops just went in.

Mish: WHAAAT? No!! Please... Trey can't go to jail.

...

I looked at Mitchell. I was so shocked. She's the one who asked me to help her now she says Trey can't go to jail? Is she mad? I spoke.



...

Me: Are you losing it?

Mish: No, I am not. Please give Trey a chance.

Me: Get out of my car.

Mish: Excuse me?

Me: You heard me. Get out of my car. You made me your fool. I am actually tired

Mish: Aaron, No... It's not like...

...

I got out of the car and opened the door for her. I then spoke.

...

Me: Get out.

Mish: Aaron please don't do this. I'm sorry.

...

I got her out of my car. I then went inside and drove off. I actually didn't know where I was going. Am I that foolish? Why would these sisters treat me like a fool? And Mish??? Did she really have to be foolish? Dammit!!

To be continued

12

[Kitso / Tso]

Malebo started crying. We actually did not give a damn. She brought this upon herself. Nolly and I sat in bed and spoke.

...

Nolly: Kitso, I heard that you left the house with the bodyguards. What happened to them?

Me: Do you want the truth?

Nolly: Yes, I do.

Me: Well, I don't know. I was so drunk. When I was carried to the car, I thought that I was carried by the bodyguards but when I got sober I realized that I was not with the bodyguards but our husbands.

Nolly: You are so foolish.

Me: I am sorry.

Nolly: But what happened to the bodyguards? They never went back to Aaron's house.

Me: I have no idea, sister.

Nolly: Are you aware that I am here because of you? Are you aware that I got beaten up because of you? Are you aware that I got raped because of you?

Me: Yes... I am, and I am very sorry.

Nolly: Let it go. I'll be fine

...

[Mr Anderson]

I was sitting outside when my phone rang. It was an American number. I just answered the phone. I already know who it is - The guy who manages my business accounts.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Me: Anderson, hello?

Caller: Mr Anderson... uhm... Your employees are on strike.

Me: But why?

Caller: Because you have not paid them.

Me: But I'll pay them.

Caller: You have been saying that for the past four months.

Me: Give me few days. My daughter in-law will give me all the money I want.

Caller: That's what you've been saying ever since your son's scandal.

Me: Just relax, okay?

Caller: Listen sir. There's this other company by the name ...  
Uhm... I forgot the name but they want to sue you.

Me: For what?

Caller: For a tender that went wrong.

Me: How is it my business? A tender or a contract?

Caller: I don't know. Between the two.

Me: Next time get your story straight because that's what I am paying you for.

Caller: No sir... You have not paid me so don't sa...

Me: SHUT UP!!!

Caller: Sorry sir.

Me: I'll get back to you soon. Tell everyone that I'll pay them soon.

Caller: Yes boss. Look I'll call you later.

Me: Bye.

...

I hung up. I was so angry. I am going to lose everything if I don't get Mitchell on my side. God, what do I do? I really have to start

being nice to Mish. But first, I am going to have to release her sisters and mother. I went inside and spoke to the guys.

...

Me: Gents, listen... We need to release them.

Trey: Who?

Me: Malebo and her daughters.

Trey: But why, dad?

Me: Because I say so.

Lano: But sir, that wasn't part of the plan.

Me: Well I've changed the plan.

Lungi: Trey... please talk to your father... those girls defamed us and we can't just let them go.

Me: We can.

Lano: We can't.

Trey: Dad, we can't.

...

A voice came from the door's direction; "Listen to your son, nobody will leave this place." We all turned around and looked at the person who was speaking. There he was, standing at the

door. Why is he here? We never liked one another so why is he here and who opened up for him?

...

[Delano / Lano]

I was so excited to see my father. I wonder how he got out of jail. I ran to him and hugged him. He then greeted everyone and sat down.

...

Mr A: Louis... What do you want?

Me: Do you know one another?

Mr Louis: Yes we do.

Me: How?

Mr A: Your father here slept with my wife.

Mr Louis: Didn't you also sleep with my wife? You actually raped her.

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Mr A: You also raped my wife.

...

We couldn't understand anything. My father and Mr Anderson started arguing. All of a sudden they physically fought. We tried separating them but we also got punches from them so we gave up and just sat down. Just when they were fighting, Mish showed up. I was so shocked. I spoke.

...

Me: Mish?

Trey: Mish?

Lungi: Mish?

Mish: Yes... Foooooooools!!!

...

My father and Trey's father stopped fighting. They were so shocked. They sat down and leaned against the wall. Well that's how tired they were because of the fight. Mr Anderson then spoke.

...

Mr A: My daughter, you??

Me: Don't call me your daughter. What is it that you want from me?

...

Trey went closer to Mish and hugged her. You can tell that Trey loves Mish but his father is controlling him. He also had teary eyes. Mish pushed him away and spoke.

...

Mish: Why did you hug me?

Trey: I really missed you.

Mish: Yeah right.

...

My father got up from the floor and grabbed Mish's hand very tight. He then spoke.

...

Mr Louis: Boys, help me.. We have to lock her up as well.

Lungi: Yes, Sure sure.

Me: Great. Let's lock her up.

Trey: (Yelling) Enough!!!

Me: What is it, Trey?

Trey: Let go of her. Leave her alone or else I'll kill all of you.

Mr Louis: Tremaine, what are you really saying?

Trey: She's still my wife and I still love her. Leave her alone.



...

Trey then pulled Mish away from all of us. Mr Anderson got up from the floor and spoke.

...

Mr A: That's good, my son. We are not going to lock up my daughter in-law.

Me: But why?

Mr A: Because I say so.

Mish: Crazy people, you are going down... where are my sisters?

Trey: I'll unlock the basement door for them.

Mish: Do that.

...

Trey ran to the basement and opened up for Malebo and her daughters. Things got out of hand when our men and Mish's men started shooting at one another... real guns were taken out. Where did Mish get these men from? They seem brutal. We all fought for our lives but Mish managed to run out of the house. I actually saw her running into Aaron's arms. Bloody bastard... so Aaron is behind everything? These brutal men are

not Mish's men but Aaron's men. Malebo got shot. That's when we all stopped firing shots.

...

[Aaron]

Mish and I went to Lungile's house. The security guy opened the gate for us. Well the cops were surrounding the house so I guess we were safe. Mish came running outside when everyone started shooting. She ran into my arms and I took her to the car.

...

Me: Mish, what happened?

Mish: I think they shot someone.

Me: Who?

Mish: I don't know. I just heard someone screaming.

Me: They will get arrested. The cops just went in.

Mish: WHAAAT? No!! Please... Trey can't go to jail.

...

I looked at Mitchell. I was so shocked. She's the one who asked me to help her now she says Trey can't go to jail? Is she mad? I spoke.

...

Me: Are you losing it?

Mish: No, I am not. Please give Trey a chance.

Me: Get out of my car.

Mish: Excuse me?

Me: You heard me. Get out of my car. You made me your fool. I am actually tired

Mish: Aaron, No... It's not like...

...

I got out of the car and opened the door for her. I then spoke.

...

Me: Get out.

Mish: Aaron please don't do this. I'm sorry.

I got her out of my car. I then went inside and drove off. I actually didn't know where I was going. Am I that foolish? Why would these sisters treat me like a fool? And Mish??? Did she really have to be foolish? Dammit!!

To be continued

13

[Lungile / Lungi]

We all got arrested except for Malebo and her daughters. Malebo was rushed to the hospital. When we got outside, we found Mish crying. Mish went closer to Trey and spoke.

...

Mish: Tremaine, I love you.

Trey: Huh?

Mish: I said that I...

Trey: I heard you but how?

Mish: I've always loved you. You know that.

Trey: If you really love me then you'll visit me at jail.

Mish: Sure.

...

Trust me when I say everyone was shocked. Mish wiped off her tears and kissed Trey's cheek. Trey smiled and left. We all left.

...

[Bonolo / Nolly]

On our way back to Aaron's house. We spoke to Mish about what happened outside my home.

...

Me: Mish, do you really love him?

Mish: Yes I do and I think that's why Aaron is mad at me.

Tso: Where's Aaron?

Mish: He left. I don't know where he went to.

Me: Wow... Can I ask?

Mish: Sure.

Me: Do you love Aaron?

Mish: Call me a bitch but I don't care. Yes, I am in love with Aaron.

Tso: (Laughs) This life though... so complicated.

Mish: You can say that again.

Me: Mish?

Mish: Yes sister?

Me: Please forgive me.

Mish: I've forgiven you a long time ago.

Me: I hope that Aaron will also forgive me.

Mish: Hopefully he will.

Tso: Sisters, I am also sorry for everything that happened.

Mish: It's okay babe.

...

We had a group hug. Malebo is probably at the hospital right now. We are not planning to go and see her. We finally arrived at Aaron's house but he wasn't home. A long bath is what I needed.

...

[Mitchell / Mish]

Nolly and Tso went to take a bath so I prepared food for all of us. I phoned Aaron after preparing food.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Aaron: What?

Me: Aaron, I am sorry for everything... please come home.

Aaron: No.

Me: Please. I am also in love with you.

Aaron: You can't be in love with two men.

Me: I know but I guess I believe in polyandry.

Aaron: Rubbish... Rubbish!!!

...

He hung up on me. Mish, Mish, Mish... What is wrong with you, girlfriend? I'm actually at a breaking point. I ate and left. I went to see Trey. I know that many people might judge me but the thing is I don't care. I am in love with Trey. Yes he's Prince Gangster and a monster but I love him. Shoot me for also being in love with Aaron. I was allowed to see Trey. He then spoke.

...

Trey: Mish, I know that you love me.

Me: So why are you a monster and always beating me up?

Trey: I am sorry.

Me: I don't hold grudges. You are still my husband and I've forgiven you.

Trey: Wow... Thank you, babe.

Me: It's okay, husband.

Trey: I am done with my father.

Me: Promise?

Trey: Yes babe. I promise.

...

Tears streamed down my face. What have I gotten myself into?  
How can I love two men at the same time?

...

Trey: Don't cry. I'll make things right.

Me: You don't get it... Nothing will ever be fine.

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Trey: Why are you  
saying that?

Me: My heart is messed up. I am a slag, baby. I am a bad slag.

Trey: Don't say that, please.

Me: But it's t...

Trey: (Screams) Uhhhh.

Me: What's going on?

...

Trey started screaming. I wiped off my tears and called out for  
help. All of a sudden Trey was unconscious. He was rushed to  
the hospital. God, please save my husband's life.

...



[At The Hospital]

The doctors attended to Trey. I was in the waiting room when one doctor came to me. He then spoke.

...

Doc: Mrs Anderson, we have a big problem.

Me: What's the problem?

Doc: We need a bone marrow donor for your husband.

Me: What? Suddenly? When? When do you need it?

Doc: By tomorrow. His life is in danger.

Me: I am willing to donate mine to him.

Doc: We are going to have to run some tests to see if you are a match.

Me: Okay. No problem. Let's do it.

Doc: Now please.

Me: Sure.

...

The doctor ran some tests on me. It didn't take much time. He then spoke.

...

Doc: I've got good news and bad news.

Me: Start with the good news please.

Doc: You are a match.

Me: And bad news?

Doc: We might lose you if you donate your bone marrow to your husband.

...

Bone marrow?? Lose me?? How?? Tears rolled down my face as I spoke.

...

Me: And if I don't donate to him what's going to happen to him?

Doc: He's going to die.

Me: Doctor Nooo... when did a bone marrow become something so huge?

Doc: Sorry Mrs Anderson but we only have one day left.

Me: But what if I die?

Doc: Why don't you call his family to help?

Me: Family?

Doc: Yes... Family.

Me: Uhm... Okay. I'll get back to you.

...

I went outside. I actually didn't know what to do. Trey's father is in jail, and Trey's other family ain't around. What on earth should I do? I'll go see Mr Anderson.

...

[At Jail]

They gave me a chance to see Trey's father. I don't know whether he was pretending or not but he had a huuuuge smile on his face. It was actually irritating me. He then spoke.

...

Mr A: My daughter, I knew that you wouldn't abandon us after a small mistake we made.

Me: Bone marrow.

Mr A: Pardon?

Me: Tremaine is dying... he needs a bone marrow.

Mr A: Okay.

Me: Okay?

Mr A: I'm in jail so how do you expect me to donate to him?

Me: Don't worry about that one.

My A: Are you saying what I think you are saying?

Me: And what do you think I am saying?

Mr A: You are going to get me out of jail.

Me: I know nothing about your bail hearing.

Mr A: So how am I supposed to donate?

Me: You'll be taken to the hospital by the police.

Mr A: Fine.

Me: Thanks. I'll be right back.

...

I informed the police about everything. They didn't take much time nor did they argue with me because they said that the police at the hospital had already told them. We went with Mr Anderson to the hospital.

...

To be continued...

14

[Bonolo / Nolly]

Aaron finally came home. Kitso and I found him watching Tv.  
We sat down next to him and spoke.

...

Tso: Aaron??

Aaron: Yes?

Tso: We are sorry.

Me: Yes Aaron, we are sorry for everything. We know that  
you've done a lot for us.

Aaron: And did you even appreciate me?

Me: Yes, we did. We still do.

Aaron: I don't believe.

Tso: It's the truth... What happened between you and Mish?

Aaron: Why don't you ask her?

Me: We thought that she went to look for you. She's not home  
hey.

Aaron: I see.

Tso: If you love her... why don't you tell her?

...

Aaron kept quiet. I then spoke.

...

Me: What's going on, Aaron?

Aaron: Is my living room an interrogation room?

Me: Of course not.

Aaron: Good so stop interrogating me.

Tso: Sorry.

Me: Sorry, Aaron.

...

He just got up and went to his bedroom. I spoke to Tso.

...

Me: Mish must have done something wrong.

Tso: I think Mish went to see Trey.

Me: I also think so.

Tso: She needs to make up her mind.

Me: You are right hey.

...

Mish walked in. Her eyes were super red. She came closer to us and spoke.

...

Mish: You don't have to talk about me behind my back.

Tso: Mish, it's not like that but come on girl... make up your mind.

Me: Exactly.

Mish: Where's Aaron?

Tso: His bedroom.

Me: Mitchell, why are your eyes red?

Mish: Trey is dying.

Me: Good riddance.

Mish: Woooow.

...

She then walked away. Gosh... I guess I was too harsh. I ran after her.

...

Me: Sorry. I didn't mean it.

Mish: Just leave me alone.

Me: What happened to Trey?

...

Mish then slammed the door on my face. I went back to Tso.

...

[Tremaine / Trey]

I woke up at the hospital and the doctor told me everything about my health. He also told me that Mish is really worried about me. I then spoke to him.

...

Me: Doctor, please call my father. He'll help me.

Doc: Uhm... I don't think so.

Me: What do you mean?

Doc: Mish had come here with the police and your father. She then went home to take a bath and I got busy with your father. He's also a match just like Mish and he's also in the same situation as Mish.

Me: I-Uhh-Ouch... Don't understand.

Doc: Mish can donate a bone marrow to you but we might lose her... your father can also donate a bone marrow to you but we might also lose him so when I told your father everything... he



refused to give you a little bit of his bone marrow. He said that he doesn't want to die and you'll be the one to die.

Me: Wow... did he say that?

Doc: Yes.

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: And what did Mish say?

Doc: She doesn't know that your father left the hospital, but she'll soon be here.

Me: Okay.

...

Mish arrived. She kissed my forehead and sat down next to me. She then spoke.

...

Mish: Did your father donate to you?

Me: No.

Mish: Doctor... why is it taking time?

Doc: He refused.

Mish: But why?

Doc: He was in the same situation as you.

Mish: Okay fine. I'll donate my bone marrow to my husband.

Me: No Mish, you can't. Just let me die.

Mish: I've made up my mind.

Doc: But we might lose you, Mitchell.

Mish: Yes I know that I might die but at least I'll get to save someone.

...

I couldn't believe it. Tears rolled down my face. The last time I cried was when I beat up Mish and left her next to the road. My father was the one who said I should beat up my wife. So where's he when I need him? I've taken orders from my father and hurt the people I love. Now where's my father? I really can't allow Mish to donate a bone marrow to me. I'll be the one to die... my father also said it. Today I got to see how much Mish loves me.

...

[Mitchell / Mish]

Trey tried stopping me from donating a bone marrow to him but I had already made up my mind. Before the doctor took us... I spoke.

...

Me: Doc, can you please give us a moment?

Doc: Okay then.

Me: Thanks.

...

The doctor left and I spoke to Trey.

...

Me: Trey?

Trey: Mish?

Me: Look... I know that you might not like this but the truth is I slept with Aaron.

...

Trey held my hand and spoke.

...

Trey: And I don't deserve to be mad at you. I am the one who's at fault. I pushed you away, Mish.

Me: (Smiles) Trey, you mean that you are not mad at me?

Trey: No, I am not mad at you. I've done the worst to you. I've cheated on you even in your presence.

Me: Can I ask you something?

Trey: Yes please.

Me: Have you ever used protection with the other ladies you cheated on me with?

Trey: Always.

Me: And I should believe that?

Trey: Baby, I love you... I did everything I did because of my father. I never wanted to hurt you.

Me: I don't want to listen to that.

Trey: But it's the truth.

Me: Sorry to say this but the truth is your father does not love you.

Trey: I've seen that.

Me: And I've always loved you.

Trey: I know.

Me: And I became your punching bag just after our marriage.

Trey: I know.

Me: And today I am giving you my bone marrow and I might die.

Trey: I know.

Me: So tell me, Trey... isn't that love?

Trey: It is.

Me: So why can't you also love me? I don't want to be getting the love I deserve from any guy but you.

Trey: And you'll get it.

Me: I want you to love me like the way you used to love me before we got married.

Trey: Yes babe, I hear you.

...

I had teary eyes.

...

To be continued...

15

[Mitchell / Mish]

Me: I want my Tremaine back. I really do.

Trey: So don't give me your bone marrow. I might lose you.

Me: If I don't give you my bone marrow... I might lose you and I don't want that.

Trey: So it's okay for me to lose you but it's not okay for you to lose me?

Me: Tremaine, please don't start.

Trey: But baby think about it. I can't lose you.

Me: And I can't lose you.

...

A small argument turned into a very serious argument. I got angry and went to call the doctor. I told the doctor that I am ready so he took Trey and I to theatre room. Trey and I were no longer talking to one another. I don't care... he may be angry but I will do this.

...

[Kitso / Tso]

It's the next day and Mish did not sleep at home. Where could she be? I kept myself hygienic clean and went to the kitchen. I found Aaron. I greeted and sat down.

...

Me: Aaron, aren't you going to work today?

Aaron: I am.

Me: When?

Aaron: Anytime I want.

Me: Okay then.

Aaron: Yep.

...

He was just sitting down, staring at the window so I got up and prepared breakfast. As I was preparing breakfast, Nolly walked in. She greeted and sat down.

...

Nolly: Aaron, what are you staring at?

Aaron: Nothing.

Nolly: Where's Mish?

Me: I have no idea.

Nolly: Mhm.

...

We all ate. It was so quiet in the kitchen. All of a sudden, Nolly's phone started ringing. She answered it but after talking to the phone she wasn't okay at all.

...

Me: What's going on? You didn't say much on the phone but you really look disturbed.

Nolly: It's Mitchell.

Aaron: Where's she?

Nolly: The hospital.

Me: Why?

Nolly: Her life is in danger. She donated bone marrow to Trey.

Me: When?

Nolly: Last night.

Me: Let's go.

Aaron: I'm coming with.

Me: But you said that you are going to work.

Aaron: Kitso, just keep quiet and let's go.



...

We all headed to the hospital. To my surprise, it was the same hospital that Malebo was taken to. On our way to Mish's ward, we passed Malebo's ward.

...

[Bonolo / Nolly]

We got to Mish's ward and sat down next to her. I then spoke to the doctor.

...

Me: Doctor, why did you allow her to do this?

Doc: She's no longer a baby. She decided on her own and I couldn't stop her.

Tso: But why didn't you tell us?

Doc: For what, ma'am? That's not my job. I called Bonolo because Mitchell asked me to call her in the morning.

Me: Well she knew that it was going to be too late.

Aaron: And where's Trey?

Doc: The next ward.

Aaron: Is his body responding to the new bone marrow he got?

Doc: Yes it is but he's sleeping right now.

Aaron: Will he be okay?

Doc: Yes he will.

Aaron: And Mish?

Doc: It's too early to tell.

Aaron: Please save them.

...

Kitso and I looked at one another. We were actually shocked. Why is Aaron being nice now?

...

[Aaron]

With the information I found early in the morning, how can I be mean to Trey and Mish? I really want Trey to be fine and I pray that Mish will also be fine. All my attention is now on Mr Anderson. I am going to crash him. And I am not planning to tell anyone about the information I found. Yes... it made me angry but I can handle everything on my own. I'll tell Trey about it as soon as he's fine. I want him to know his father for the monster he is - someone he always praised and respected betrayed him and he is still going on with the betrayal. I got up and went to Trey's ward. He was sleeping as the doctor already said. I sat beside him and spoke; "Leano, wake up. You have to wake up.

I..." Before I could finish my sentence, Nolly was standing at the door. She then spoke.

...

Nolly: You called him by the name Leano... how do you know that name?

Me: Mish told me everything about Trey.

Nolly: Ohh yeah... of course.

...

I was lying. Mish didn't tell me Trey's other name. The information I found told me everything. I believe I now know everything about Trey. Even the things he doesn't know about himself. Lord, can Trey just wake up? Or can Mish at least wake up? I also need to talk to her about everything I found. This girl is stinking rich and she doesn't know. Now I understand why Mr Anderson wanted to see her so bad. Bonolo walked in and spoke.

...

Nolly: Aaron, what are you planning?

Me: Nothing, why?

Nolly: So why are you nice to Trey?

Me: Do I have a choice? Mish loves him.

Nolly: And you love Mish.

Me: Just let it go, please.

Nolly: You can fight for Mish you know? You don't deserve to have plastics as your girlfriend.

...

I laughed and spoke.

...

Me: Plastics?

Nolly: Sorry. I meant to say Lexy.

Me: Bonolo... I truly mean it. Trey should wake up now.

Nolly: You are weird.

Me: I know.

Nolly: Well Mish is awake.

Me: You are lying.

Nolly: And why would I lie?

Me: Are you serious?

Nolly: Very serious and she wants to see you.

Me: (Smiles) Okay, let's go.

...

We went back to Mish's ward and she was indeed awake and calling my name. The moment she saw me, she kept quiet. I went closer to her and spoke.

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">...

Me: I'm here now... it's okay.

Mish: So... I didn't die, right?

Me: You are a fighter, dear.

Mish: But Aaron... I am sorry.

Me: For what?

Mish: For loving Trey.

Me: Why are you saying that? I'm not mad at you. I am now fine.

Mish: Really?

Me: Yes and I am happy for you and Trey... everyone make mistakes.

...

Kitso and Nolly looked at me and shook their heads. Mish spoke.

...

Mish: Please pinch me.

Me: Why?

Mish: I think I am dreaming.

Me: (Laughs) No, you are not.

Mish: Aaron, please pinch me.

...

I giggled and did exactly as I was told. She smiled and spoke.

...

Mish: Wow, it's not a dream.

Me: Exactly.

Mish: You are such a great guy. Thank you so much.

Me: Don't mention it.

...

The doctor walked in and told us that Trey is awake and he wants to see Mish. So Mish was taken to Trey's ward. We all followed.

...

[Tremaine / Trey]

The moment I woke up I requested to see my wife. I was so worried about her not knowing if she's okay or not but the doctor came with her. Aaron, Nolly and Kitso also came to my ward. Why is Aaron here? This guy though. I then spoke.

...

Me: Mish baby... are you fine?

Mish: Yeah I didn't die.

Me: Doctor, will Mish die tomorrow?

Doc: No. She's absolutely fine... the love she has for you did not allow her to leave you.

Me: (Smiles) I am happy.

...

To my surprise, Aaron was also smiling. I then spoke to him.

...

Me: Aaron, why are you here?

Aaron: I've arranged for your papers. You'll get released from jail no matter what.

...

We were all shocked. What the hell is Aaron up to? I then spoke.

...

Me: And why are you helping me?

Aaron: It's a long story.

Me: Summarize it.

Aaron: Please get well then I'll tell you everything.

Me: Fine, Aaron.

Aaron: And I am sorry for everything.

Me: You mean for sleeping with my wife?

Aaron: Ohh so she told you?

Me: Yes, she's honest you know.

Aaron: It's a pity you are only realizing now.

Me: Please stop it.

Aaron: Sorry.

Me: Look Aaron... I've forgiven you.

Aaron: I pray that God also forgave you.

Me: Aaron!!!

Aaron: Sorry.

Mish: Aaron and Trey, please stop it.



Aaron: Sorry Mish.

Me: Sorry babe.

Aaron: Can I please talk to Trey in private?

Mish: Why?

Aaron: Come on. Because I've got something to tell him.

Mish: Fine.

...

Mish, the doctor, Nolly and Kitso left. I was now left with Aaron. He started talking.

...

Aaron: I want you to tell me something.

Me: Like?

Aaron: Why do you trust your father?

Me: I don't trust him anymore.

Aaron: Why?

Me: Because I have realized that he's a very bad man.

Aaron: How old are you?

Me: Aaron, what's going on?

Aaron: Won't you answer a simple question?

Me: I am 26 years old.

Aaron: So you want to tell me that you've been a fool for 26 years?

Me: Stop insulting me.

Aaron: Your father is very wicked.

Me: I know.

Aaron: Don't you want to destroy him?

Me: He's waaay too powerful.

Aaron: A broke man can never be powerful.

Me: Is my father broke?

Aaron: Very broke. Just get well soon and I'll show you everything.

Me: Come on... I'm in the dark right now. At least give me a clue of what's happening.

Aaron: I don't want to upset you so it's best if you get better first then I'll tell you everything about your father.

Me: Fine then and what do you want in return?

Aaron: Nothing.

Me: Such lies.

Aaron: I'm serious. I'm also going to benefit from this.

Me: How?

Aaron: Patience, Leano... Patience.

...

He then walked out. I wonder what it is that he wants to tell me about my father. Should I trust him?

...

To be continued...

16

[Mr Anderson]

Finally we got released from jail. The court did not deny us bail. I used the last money that I had to pay for my bail. Trey is probably dead by now so I'll just go to his house. As much as I don't like Mr Louis... I still allowed him to take me to Trey's house. Well, he had called one of the guys who works for him to come and fetch all of us - Lungile, Delano, Mr Louis and I. The last time I saw Trey was at the hospital and he was soon going to die. I refused to give him my bone marrow. I didn't want to die. God will forgive me.

...

Lano: So Mr Anderson... did you really refuse to give your son a new life?

Me: What are you talking about?

Lano: Everyone knows the truth so tell me... Where's Trey? Did he die?

Me: I don't know.

Mr Louis: What kind of a father are you? You don't know whether your son is alive or not?

Me: Don't judge me. I just got out of jail like you.

Mr Louis: Go to the hospital then.

Me: I'll call the hospital.

Mr Louis: Do it.

...

I took out my phone and called the doctor that was taking care of my son.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Doc: Yes, Mr Anderson... how may I help you?

Me: Is my son dead?

Doc: Do you really care?

Me: Of course I care, that's why I called.

Doc: Well, we lost him. I am sorry.

Me: Okay... Fine but can I ask?

Doc: Yes, please.

Me: Did he leave some money behind?

Doc: What money?

Me: Look... it's fine. I have to go.

Doc: Bye.

...

I hung up and spoke.

...

Me: He's dead.

Mr Louis: You don't care, do you?

Me: What are you now talking about?

Mr Louis: I heard you talking about money.

Me: Just stay out of my business.

Mr Louis: Fine.

Lungi: So Mr Anderson, why didn't you ask about your son's corpse?

Me: I... Uhm... just let it go.

...

I finally arrived at Trey's house. To my surprise, it was locked. I couldn't go inside the yard. Mish must be the one who changed the access of the house. I called her and she didn't answer. I went back to the car and spoke.

...

Me: Look Louis... I need a place to crash just for a week.

Mr Louis: (Laughs) Fine.

Me: Sure.

...

We left.

...

[Tremaine / Trey]

It's been 2 days ever since I was discharged from the hospital. I know it's weird but I am now staying with Aaron, Mish, Kitso and Nolly. Both Mish and I are healing. Aaron is just like an angel. He is sooooo good to me but it's really weird. I was just in bed, listening to music when Aaron walked in. He sat down next to me and spoke.

...

Aaron: How are you feeling?

Me: Aaron, please tell me what you want from me.

Aaron: Nothing... why?

Me: You can't just be this nice to me.

Aaron: Well I guess that I am a veeery nice person.

Me: You obviously want something in return.

Aaron: Get well soon and you'll understand everything once you've healed.

Me: Aaron, come on... I am perfectly fine right now.

Aaron: You are healing, Prince Gangster but you are not okay.

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: Don't call me Prince Gangster.

...

Aaron burst into laughter and spoke.

...

Aaron: I thought that you love that name.

Me: Just shut up.

Aaron: Relax... I made lunch so I am here to help you get downstairs or do you want me to come with your lunch here and feed you?

Me: Aaron, you are such a nuisance.

Aaron: (Laughs) Sorry.

Me: Aren't you supposed to be at work?

Aaron: No.



Me: Mish is in the other room.

Aaron: I know.

Me: So go to her.

Aaron: Trey let me tell you something.

Me: Go ahead.

Aaron: Mitchell loves you and I also really loved her. I am now fine. At first I was angry and asked myself why she still loves you even after what you did to her but now I have accepted that she's yours. But please don't hurt her again. Tell me... do you think it's easy to find a girl who'd risk her own life for you?

Me: Aaron, I know that Mish loves me and I also love her.

Aaron: Promise me that you won't go back to your father.

Me: I promise.

Aaron: And Promise me that you won't hurt Mish again.

Me: I promise.

Aaron: Look at me... don't break your two promises or else I'll kill you myself.

Me: Fine, Aaron.

Aaron: I am actually serious. You may be the biggest gangster around but I am not scared of you.

Me: I heard you, dad.

...

He helped me get downstairs. This guy is really weird. We got downstairs and ate. I then spoke.

...

Me: I thought that Mish is home. Where's she?

Nolly: Mish went to work. You have a great wife you know. She's still weak but she went to work because she cares a lot about your company.

Me: And I am grateful but Aaron said that Mish is home.

Nolly: Well she left like 5 minutes ago.

Me: Okay.

Nolly: Trey, you are not a bad guy you know. I can tell.

Me: Thanks Nolly.

...

I honestly did not feel great. I've been a very bad person but everyone here forgave me. My phone rang. It happened to be my wife.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Me: Hey babe.

Mish: Hey honey. Guess what?

Me: Please just tell me.

Mish: Do you remember a big contract that we badly wanted like few months back? Before you and I got married?

Me: Yes, I remember.

Mish: We got it babe... we got it.

Me: Are you serious?

Mish: Yes babe.

Me: Wow that's great but many people does not want to work with me because of that scandal.

Mish: Don't worry. I cleared your name. You and I are going places.

Me: Mitchell, why?

Mish: Why what?

Me: Why are you doing all of this for me?

Mish: Tremaine, I know that you are not a bad person. Remember that I am also doing this for my company. It's our company, babe.

Me: Thank you.

Mish: Don't thank me babe.

Me: I love you so much.

Mish: And I love you too. I have to go. I'll see you later, okay?

Me: Okay baby.

...

She hung up. I was so happy. We finally got the biggest contract ever. It's really amazing. Mish is simply the best.

...

To be continued...

17

[Lexy]

I was at the mall when Mish came to me. I wonder what it is that she wants from me. She then spoke.

...

Mish: Hey Lexy.

Me: Sure.

Mish: Can we talk?

Me: About what?

Mish: About Aaron.

Me: You already have him so we don't have to talk.

Mish: That's your problem. You've concluded everything. Let's go inside the restaurant, sit down and talk.

Me: Fine.

...

We went to the restaurant and sat down. We then ordered dessert. I then spoke.

...

Me: I'm listening.

Mish: Aaron and I are not together. I am married, Boo.

Me: Married? Really?

Mish: Yes I am married and I really love my husband. Aaron is yours.

Me: (Smiles) But Aaron does not really love me.

Mish: And why are you saying that?

Me: Aaron has got a girl that he should marry.

Mish: What? And who's the girl?

Me: My sister.

...

Mish's jaws dropped. She was soooo shocked. I laughed and spoke.

...

Me: I understand why you are shocked.

Mish: You are not Aaron's girlfriend and your sister is Aaron's girlfriend?

Me: Something like that.

Mish: But I am lost.

Me: Well I want Aaron but he doesn't want me.

Mish: Have you slept with him?

Me: Uhm... Yeah.

Mish: How?

Me: It's a long story but I'll tell you everything very soon.

Mish: Okay then. I'll go now. I guess I'll see you soon.

Me: Yeah sure... here's my number.

...

I gave her my number and she left.

...

[Aaron]

Mish came home and she looked like someone who just saw a ghost. She didn't even greet me... she just spoke.

...

Mish: Aaron, are you getting married?

Me: Huh?? Marriage?? I don't believe in marriage.

Mish: Ohh really?

Me: Yes, really.

Mish: Deceitful.

...

She then walked away. I was so shocked. What happened? Who said that I am getting married? What's going on? I think I should talk to Trey before it's too late. I called him to my bedroom. We sat down. I then spoke.

Advertisement

26, 26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">...

Me: Tremaine, I'll get straight to the point.

Trey: Okay. I'm all ears.

Me: Mitchell has got all our money.

Trey: Huh? What money?

Me: Our money.

Trey: You mean Mish stole from us?

Me: No No... I mean that Mish is the one who's got our family money.

Trey: I am lost.

Me: Father always said that your wife will be the one to take care of our money so Mish got our money the time you got married to her but she doesn't know. Mr Anderson knows that's why he wanted to see Mish so badly. He knows that with Mish in his life, he's a very rich man.

Trey: I am still lost.



Me: Gosh, Trey... Mr Anderson is not your father.

Trey: (Laughs) What are you trying to say?

Me: What I am trying to say is that we all thought that you died.

Trey: I'm lost.

Me: Mom and I thought that you died with dad... the real king.

Trey: Your dad, the real king?

Me: You are from a royal family, aren't you?

Trey: Yes I am.

Me: You are a prince, aren't you?

Trey: Yes I am.

Me: I am also a prince.

Trey: Okay, I'm listening.

Me: What I am trying to say is... You are Tremaine Leano Banks. You are not Tremaine Leano Anderson... you are my brother.

...

He looked at me with a shocked face and got up from the bed. God, please prepare me for the questions that Trey is about to ask. I really thought that my brother had died. How was I supposed to know that Leano never died? I knew him by the name Leano but now he's got another name and he obviously

got it from the Anderson family. He was always Leano Banks and not Tremaine Leano Anderson.

...

[Tremaine / Trey]

What rubbish is Aaron telling me? I've never had an elder brother or is he my younger brother? After all, he looks young. I spoke.

...

Me: Aaron, did you say that you are my younger brother?

Aaron: Don't insult me. What younger brother? Who said that I am younger than you?

Me: I am 26 years old so you must also be 26 or 25, right?

Aaron: I'm 30 years old.

Me: As old as you are, you slept with a girl who's just 21 years old?

Aaron: And who's that?

Me: My wife dammit... Mish!!!

Aaron: And what's wrong with that? She's not a baby... she's a woman.

Me: But...

Aaron: Can you just shut up and stop acting like a baby?? I said that I am your brother. Won't you ask me questions?

Me: No... I won't.

Aaron: But why?

Me: Because you are lying.

Aaron: And why would I lie?

Me: I don't know.

Aaron: Screw you. I am going back to the others.

...

To be continued...

18

[Tremaine / Trey]

He began to walk away. I called his name just when he was by the door. He turned around and looked at me. He then spoke.

...

Aaron: What?

Me: I am curious. Please come back.

Aaron: Say please again.

Me: I already said please. I won't say it again.

Aaron: Okay then. I'll go.

Me: Okay wait... I'll say please again.

Aaron: Say it.

Me: Please, Please, Please come back.

...

He smiled and came back. He sat down. I also sat down. I then spoke.

...

Me: Are you really my younger brother?

Aaron: No I am not your younger brother. I am your elder brother.

Me: But how? I only have a younger sister and an elder sister.

Aaron: They are not your sisters... they are Anderson's children and you are not Anderson's child.

Me: Aaron... do you see how calm I am? You better not be lying because I know that I can explode right now.

Aaron: Look Leano... I don't have time for lies. Just listen to me.

Me: Fine. So who's my father?

Aaron: Your father is my father... Mr Banks.

Me: And my mother?

Aaron: Look, Leano... We share a mother and a father.

Me: You said that your father passed on... when and how?

Aaron: The day you were born our father passed on.

Me: Okay. I'm still listening.

Aaron: I was just four years old so I never remembered everything until I found something that was left by my father... I mean our father.

Me: And what did you find?

Aaron: Here you go.

Me: A letter?

Aaron: Read it.

Me: Okay.

...

Aaron handed me a letter. I unfolded it and began reading it.

...

[The Letter]

"Dear Leano Banks who's soon going to be Tremaine Leano Anderson. You are my son and you'll never be Anderson's son. You do not belong to the Anderson family... you belong to the Banks family. And the truth is The Anderson family is not a royal family. They've always wanted my chieftainship - my chiefdom and the throne - they've always wanted my throne. They are a very cruel family and I'd like to tell you that if something happens to me... The Anderson family will be responsible. You are probably asking yourself how I know the name Tremaine. Well here's the truth... yesterday when I was passing by a group of men on my own... I heard them talking about me so I quickly hid my face in disguise and listened to them. They were talking about how they'll take me down, and they even mentioned Anderson so many times. Their plan was to kill my wife... my elder son and kill me so that they can take you and my family money. Well they even said that your identity will be changed -

they said that your name will be Tremaine Leano Anderson. Anderson knew that my younger son's wife was the one who was going to take care of the family money that's why he didn't kill you. Please choose your wife wisely because we can't afford to lose all the money. I don't want my family to ever be financially embarrassed. When you read this letter I might be dead but at least you'll get to know your brother and mother. I'll make sure that they don't kill them that's why I am going to send them to South Africa. Well... someone will send them to South Africa - someone I trust with my life. I already bought a very huge and beautiful mansion for them. Please don't be mad at my wife and your brother because they are not responsible for everything that happened. I pray that you get to read this letter once you are 16 years old and mature enough to understand that I did not just give up. Anderson is dangerous... I have tried everything to protect myself and my family members but somehow he always end up winning. I don't want you to be like a monster, and I don't want you to be like Mr Anderson. I know that he'll make you do all the wrong things in life. Leano... daddy loves you so much and I'd like you to unite with your brother... please don't hate him. Go see your mother and she'll tell you how everything happened. Goodbye, Son."

...

I am a man... I don't cry so I guess my eyes were sweating. I was fuming. I was seriously tamping. Why would Anderson do all of this to me? It's too late because I am a monster like him. Aaron then spoke.

...

Aaron: I'm sorry Bro.

Me: But why?

Aaron: I don't know.

Me: No Aaron, why did you only give me the letter now?

Aaron: Listen... I couldn't open the safe box for so many years, and I failed to get the pin code until I tried your date of birth recently. The pin code is your date of birth. I am sorry bro but the letter was in the safe box.

Me: Aaron, I am already a monster.

Aaron: With Mish in your life... you are not a monster. That girl loves you and I think she changed you.

Me: So where's mom?

Aaron: Home.

Me: Where's home? Does she know about me?

Aaron: She's around Johannesburg, and no she doesn't know anything about you but I want you to meet her



...

I wiped off my sweat... Yeah, my sweat and not tears. I then drank water and spoke.

...

Me: When?

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Aaron: Today.

Me: Please.

...

A voice came from the door's direction; "So y'all are brothers? That's awesome" Aaron and I looked at the door and we saw the three sisters walking in. Aaron then spoke.

...

Aaron: Were you eavesdropping?

Mish: We couldn't help it. Sorry.

Nolly: Damn... Mr Anderson is really cruel. How can he make you his own child and kill your father? He must pay.

Me: Definitely.

Tso: So the two of you slept with Mish??!! Two brothers know how my sister is in bed? That's amazing and weird.

Mish: Tso, please stop it.

Tso: But It's the truth.

Mish: Who said that I slept with Aaron?

Tso: Nolly told me.

Mish: And who told her that I slept with Aaron?

Nolly: You have a very weak memory. Sorry honey.

Tso: Trey mentioned it at the hospital. It was the time Aaron was apologizing to Trey... like Helloooo???!!!

Mish: Ohh yeah... I remember but let's not talk about it. It's really embarrassing.

Aaron: You can say that again.

...

Aaron and Mish laughed. Well I guess It was a bit funny... like my brother slept with my wife and he didn't know that he's my brother. It's really weird and... Uhm... disgusting. Mish then spoke.

...

Mish: I can't believe that I am a billionaire and I didn't know. So what's going to happen once I run away with The Banks money?

Aaron: (Laughs) I'll kill you.

Mish: (Laughs) Life though. So can we get going? I want to meet my mother in-law.

Aaron: Well you should dress up decently. You are not just going to see my mom, but you are going to see the queen.

Tso: So is it like a real palace?

Aaron: Yes it is. There are guards and maids everywhere.

Mish: But she's not the queen to anyone in South Africa. The Banks are not South Africans. Mr Anderson took their throne and everything in USA so...

Tso: Mish, are you not too honest? Stop it.

Mish: Sorry. I am just trying to understand everything.

Nolly: Wow so is your mom a mean queen?

Aaron: No, my mom is such a darling.

Mish: I'm actually scared. What if she also won't like me like The Anderson family?

Aaron: The Banks family is nothing like The Anderson family. Mom will definitely love you.

Mish: Do we really have to go with you and Trey?

Aaron: Yes please.

Me: Yes baby. I need you by my side.

Mish: Okay then but can't we go tomorrow? I mean it's quite late right now. We'll go tomorrow morning.

Aaron: Okay then. Tomorrow morning it is.

Mish: Thanks a lot, Aaron... Thanks for everything hey.

Aaron: It's a pleasure.

Me: And I am sorry to everyone. I am sorry for everything I did.

Tso: I forgive you, Prince Gan... (Smiles) Uhm, Prince Trey.

Nolly: I also forgive you.

Aaron: I also forgive you and I am also sorry for everything I did.

Me: I have forgiven you.

...

Now everyone started apologizing. It was really amazing. I am done with being a gangster. It's not like I need the money. I was doing all the bad things because of a man who's not even my father, but he will pay. Mish then spoke.

...

Mish: Trey... Kitso was with the bodyguards the day she got kidnapped. You killed them... right?

Me: (Looks Down) Uhm, Yeah... I am sorry.

Mish: I knew that It was you. Well it's all in the past, baby... I still love you.

Me: (Smiles) And I love you more.

...

She sat on my lap and kissed my cheek. It's great having my wife back. I am going to be a better man to my wife from today onwards. Truth be told... I am nothing without Mish. I am going to work on my marriage - I'll stop it from collapsing and it's a promise.

...

To be continued...

19

[Aaron]

It's finally the next day and we all got ready to go see my mom. Mish walked in and sat down as we were all in the kitchen. She then spoke.

...

Mish: I've been outside and I saw so many cars. What's happening?

Me: We are taking all the cars to the palace.

Mish: Does it have to be perfect? One car is fine.

Me: We must go there with the guards and the drivers. Please don't question us. I feel like you are questioning my mother right now and it's wrong.

...

Mish: (They are truly living a fairytale life. Did they have to continue living like how they used to live before they lost everything to Mr Anderson? This kingdom lifestyle is just too much.)

...

Mish: Sorry, Aaron.

Me: It's okay. Can we go now?

Mish: I'm not feeling well. I'll meet your mother some other time.

Trey: What? Why?

Mish: Because Aaron was just rude to me.

...

Mish then got up and went outside. I followed her. She's such a drama queen. I held her hands and spoke.

...

Me: Mish, please go with us.

Mish: Say sorry first.

Me: I am sorry... really sorry.

Mish: Say it again.

Me: Mish, but...

Mish: Leave my hands. I'm not going anywhere.

Me: Okay fine. I am sorry.

Mish: Say it again.

Me: I am sorry. I am sorry. I am sorry.

Mish: Fine. I'll come along.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you honey.

Mish: Heyyyy Man... I'm not your honey. Lexy is your honey or should I say Lexy's sister is your honey?

Me: Don't start.

Mish: When will you tell me about Lexy's sister? I heard that you are supposed to get married to her.

Me: Mish, there's something I need to tell you.

Mish: I am listening.

Me: Lexy and Leona are Anderson's children.

Mish: Who's Leona?

Me: Lexy's sister.

Mish: Abomination. What are you telling me? Are you going to get married to Leona Anderson?

Me: No.

Mish: So what are you really saying?

Me: The reason why I am expected to marry Leona is so I can get to pay Leona's mom.

Mish: I don't understand.

Me: My mom's sister owes Leona's mom so the bank refused to give us the money without your signature and your permission since it's a lot of money. Like I said before... you are the only



one who is holding our family accounts, and I'm talking about big accounts so I believed that Trey died and obviously I thought that we can't pay Leona's mom.

Mish: Couldn't you tell the bank that Trey died so that they can allow you access to the money? Or couldn't you tell the bank that Trey never got married? Couldn't you provide Trey's death certificate since you believed that he had died?

Me: I did. I tried everything but they still refused to help me.

Mish: Did you ever think that maybe the person you met at the bank was working for The Andersons?

Me: Huh? Do you really think so?

Mish: Duh!! It's unlike you to be slow and get fooled.

Me: Wow... I really did not think about that.

Mish: So the queen is friends with the Anderson family even after what happened?

Me: No. The queen's sister who is my aunt did not know. She was Marla's friend for so long. We told her everything when she came to SA but it was already too late. Marla then said that if she can't be paid... I should marry Leona to settle the score.

Mish: So are you telling me that you don't love Leona?

Me: I don't.

Mish: How many children does Mr Anderson have? I thought that I met everyone. I am shocked. Well... don't worry. I'll sort everything out. (Winks) I am the one who's got lots and lots of money... after all.

Me: (Smiles) Thanks, Mish.

Mish: It's okay. Let's get going.

Me: I'll call everyone.

Mish: Please bring my bag for me.

Me: Got you.

...

I went back inside and called everyone. We went to the cars and left.

...

[Mitchell / Mish]

I really like Aaron but I don't just go around trusting people. What if he's also working with Anderson and wants to scam Trey? I need to get the DNA tests done. I don't know how I'll do it without telling anyone but I'll do it. I'll get Aaron's nails and Trey's nails - it should be very simple. So Marla wants Aaron to marry Leona? It doesn't make sense. Aaron's aunt is the one who is owing Marla so why should Aaron pay for it? Something

is definitely wrong but I'll find out the truth from my new friend, Lexy. We finally arrived at the palace. Oh my Gosh... it was like in the movies - it looked so real.. No, it was actually real. We went in. Everyone was so happy to see "Prince Aaron". I still can't believe that these people brought their royalty lifestyle to South Africa even after everything they went through. I admire their spirit because it looks like giving up is not their thing. We sat down and waited for the queen. Nolly then started talking.

...

Nolly: Aaron, your house is so huge and beautiful.

Aaron: Uhm... Sorry Nolly but you have to call me Prince Aaron when we are here. It's a must.

Nolly: Noted.

Aaron: And my mom should be addressed as your Highness or your majesty.

Tso: That's great.

...

Great my foot. I really feel like this royalty formalities will be too much for me. But we'll see. The queen finally came in. She greeted us and sat down. Aaron then spoke.

...

Aaron: Mother, how are you?

The Queen: I am okay my son and how are you?

Aaron: I'm great, mom.

The Queen: And who are your friends?

Aaron: Over there is Mitchell, and the lady in the middle is Kitso. Next to Kitso is Bonolo and next to me is Trey.

The Queen: Wow Mitchell? Uhm... (Smiles) Nice to meet all of you.

...

What does she mean by "Wow Mitchell"? Like what's wrong with me? We then spoke.

...

Us: Nice to meet you too, your Highness.

Aaron: Mish, you are probably wondering why the queen said "Wow Mitchell"... well she's also Mitchell.

Me: (Smiles) Ohh that's nice.

The Queen: Mitchell... if I still had my son, I was definitely going to advice him to marry you. There's just something about you.

Advertisement

26, 26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">...

Wow... weird. I looked at Trey and he was extremely quiet and his mind was probably not in the room with us. I spoke.

...

Me: Uhm... Your son? Isn't Aaron your son, your Highness? You said if you still "had" your son.

...

She shed tears as she spoke.

...

The Queen: I'm talking about my younger son, Leano. I lost him. God knows how much I am hurting. There's never a day that passes by without me having to think about Prince Aaron's younger brother. It hurts a lot.

...

Tears filled up my eyes as I spoke.

...

Me: What makes you think that your other son is dead? Did you bury him?

The Queen: I didn't bury him, but he obviously buried him. I only buried my husband.

Me: Who's this "He" you are talking about?

The Queen: My enemy - the man who took away my husband and son.

Me: Have you ever asked yourself why you never buried your son?

The Queen: My daughter... it's a long story.

Me: Prince Aaron and Prince Tremaine, please allow me to do something.

The Queen: Wow, so Trey is also a prince?

Me: Yes he is and he's my husband so unfortunately if your other son was alive he wasn't going to get the chance to marry me.

The Queen: (Smiles) I understand.

Aaron: What is it that you want to do?

Me: I couldn't help but notice the letters "BR" on your chests and they are the same size so my eyes just saw the same letters over there.

...

I said that pointing at the wall behind Queen Mitchell. She then spoke.

...

The Queen: Ohh that BR stands for Banks Royalty.

Me: And I've seen Aaron... Uhm, Prince Aaron wearing a shirt with those letters as well. Your Highness... may I please I ask you a question?

The Queen: Yes, you can.

Me: Why is it that Prince Aaron and Prince Trey have the same mark? Who marked them?

The Queen: My son Aaron was given the same mark after birth. Everyone of our family got the same mark. I also have it.

Me: Is it like a tattoo?

The Queen: It's not a tattoo but yes it's like a tattoo. It's really not painful. It's permanent ink but it was not done like a tattoo. There's a way our family artist does it - it's quick and not painful.

Me: And once you have it you can't wipe it off, right?

The Queen: True but may I also ask?

Me: Yes, your Highness. You may.

The Queen: How did you see the mark on Prince Aaron's chest?

...

The Queen though. What a question? What do I tell her? I obviously can't tell her that I saw the mark on Aaron's chest the

time I got intimate with Aaron. That's embarrassing. I mean... I am married. I laughed and spoke.

...

Me: Prince Aaron showed me... uhm... us... He was actually taking off his shirt because spilled tea had burnt him so we saw the mark when he quickly took off his shirt.

The Queen: Ohh and how come your husband has the same mark? There's something we use to get that mark, as you can see it on the wall... it has been decorated, and you can't just draw it with your hand. Why and how does your husband... Uhm... No. Who are you?

Me: I am my husband's wife. I am Mitchell.

The Queen: No. Who... who's really your husband? Who is the real him?

Me: He's your son.

...

She laughed and spoke.

...

The Queen: Mitchell my dear, you've got jokes hey. I really like you. I wouldn't mind having a son like Trey. He's so handsome and looks like a great person but my son died so please stop it.



Me: Your son never died. Leano Banks never died. He is now Tremaine Leano Anderson.

The Queen: What are you saying?

Aaron: Mom, it's true. Bob stole your son. Bob stole my brother and killed father. Bob stole everything from us including my brother.

Me: Who's Bob?

Aaron: It's Mr Anderson.

Me: (Laughs) I never knew that man's name hey. It suits him.

The Queen: What are you people saying?

...

My boo was in tears. I really felt sorry for him. Mr Anderson... Oops, I mean Bob really hurt my Trey. Trey believed that Bob Anderson was his father but all Bob ever did was to turn my Trey into a monster. That man should really pay. Aaron then spoke.

...

Aaron: Mom, do you remember father's safe box? He always kept it in my bedroom... for what? I don't know. Well, it's in the car right now.

The Queen: What? You have it? I thought that it got burnt with our old house.

Aaron: No, it didn't and I managed to open it.

The Queen: Uhm... the pin code is your brother's date of birth. I'm the one who changed the pin code.

Me: Your Highness, please hold on... Trey, when were you born?

...

Trey: Don't you know when I was born? Since when? You never forget my birthday.

Me: No. I didn't forget your birthday but I want you to say it.

...

He wiped off his tears and said his date of birth. The queen got up from her royal chair and spoke.

...

The Queen: Bob took away my son for 26 years. I will not spare him. Leano?? My son?? I am your mother. Marla Anderson is not your mother. You are my son... please come here.

...

Kitso, Nolly and I were crying. We were really touched. Trey did not have the strength - he was really shattered so he just sat

down. Aaron sent one of the guards to bring the safe box. The Queen then went closer to Trey. She knelt on her knees and cupped Trey's face with her hands. She then spoke.

...

The Queen: You are my son. You are mine. You are the Prince of this palace. You are my son.

...

Trust Trey to just keep quiet and act like he's deaf. The guards finally came with the safe box. Aaron unlocked it and gave the letter to the Queen. She read it and screamed "Nooooo". I was so hurt to see her crying. Trey got up and spoke.

...

Trey: (Shouts) Listen here... Queen Mitchell or whatever you call yourself. You never loved me that's why you wanted me to die. You were going to ask yourself why you couldn't bury me but got the chance to bury my father... if you really loved me. I want nothing to do with you.

The Queen: But I didn't...

Trey: JUST SHUT UP!!!

...

Trey then walked out of the house. I ran after him but he got in the car and drove off. I was so hurt. How can Trey do that? He was supposed to give Queen Mitchell a chance. After all... we came here to know the whole truth. I understand that Trey is hurt but what he did is very wrong.

...

To be continued...

20

[One Month Later]

[Bonolo / Nolly]

Tso and I have been staying with Aaron. Mish and Trey left. They are not even at their house. We think that they left the country. They even changed their numbers. I feel like Trey did not give the queen a chance - there's a lot he doesn't understand. He refused to listen to Aaron and Mish. I don't even know why Mish disappeared with him. I've been feeling sick every morning so I thought that I should go see the doctor. As I was leaving the house, Tso came to me. She then spoke.

...

Tso: Hey sister. Where are you going?

Me: The hospital.

Tso: Can I please go with you?

Me: Sure.

Tso: You are not going to see Malebo... right?

Me: I don't have time to play. And Malebo is probably discharged. It's been a month, babe.

Tso: You are right. Well you've been sick every morning. Are you pregnant?

Me: (Laughs) And who did I get intimate with?

Tso: I don't know. You tell me.

Me: Relax. I am single and I am not pregnant.

Tso: I hope so.

Me: Let's go.

Tso: Sure.

...

We got in the car and left. Finally we arrived at the hospital. I explained everything to the doctor and he ran some tests and also examined me. Tso was waiting outside for me. So the doctor came back with the results and spoke.

...

Doc: I have good news for you Mrs Xulu.

Me: Mrs Moraka-Xulu.

Doc: My apologies.

Me: It's okay doc, so please tell me the good news.

Doc: You are pregnant.

Me: (Laughs) Doctor, please don't joke like that.

Doc: I am serious, Mrs Moraka-Xulu. You are really pregnant.

...

I kept quiet as tears rolled down my face. I haven't been intimate with anyone except for Lungile. He must have left his stupid sperm inside the time he forced himself on me in front of Mr Anderson... Delano and Trey. The doctor spoke again.

...

Doc: Mrs Moraka-Xulu, are you okay?

Me: Yes, I'll go now. Thank you.

Doc: Okay. You are welcome.

...

I took everything that the doctor gave to me and left. On my way out, I cried even more. Tso saw me and came to me. She wiped off my tears and spoke.

...

Tso: What's wrong?

Me: I am really pregnant.

Tso: So why are you crying? You've always wanted a baby.

Me: That was then. Are you aware that I am carrying Lungile's child? Where is he right now? What am I going to tell my baby? Kitso, I know that I should be happy but I am not okay at all.

Tso: Let's go to the car. We'll talk about everything in the car.

Me: Okay.

Tso: Please don't cry. Everything will be fine.

Me: Thanks my love.

...

We went to the car. Tso and I had a chat on our way back to Aaron's house.

...

Tso: So what are you going to do, sister?

Me: Abortion is not what I'm thinking about. I'll keep the baby.

Tso: Are you going to tell Lungile?

Me: No.

Tso: And Malebo?

Me: Hell No!!

Tso: You have my support, sister.

Me: Thank you, Kitso.

...

Kitso looked down and shed a tear. I looked at her.

...



[Kitso / Tso]

How do I tell Nolly that Delano cannot stop calling me? How do I tell her that I met a guy by the name Sifiso and that we get along so well? How do I tell her that I love Sifiso and that I've been sleeping with him? How do I just tell Nolly everything? She's obviously going to judge me. She looked at me and spoke.

...

Nolly: What's wrong babe?

Me: It's nothing.

Nolly: Are you sure?

Me: Yeah. I just miss Mish.

Nolly: Well... I also miss her so much.

Me: I wonder if she'll ever come back.

Nolly: Mish will definitely come back. I think that she's away from us just so she can make Trey understand everything. You know that Trey only listens to Mish nowadays so they'll come back.

Me: (Smiles) You are right.

...

Nolly wiped off my tear and spoke.

...

Nolly: You have to stop with the tears. You are the one who said that everything will be fine.

Me: Yeah.

...

We finally arrived at Aaron's house and he was still at work. My phone rang. It was Sifiso so I quickly went to my bedroom and locked the door. I then answered the phone call.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Me: Hey babe.

Sifiso: Hey honey. Did you tell your sisters about me or you are still struggling to do so?

Me: Sifiso, there's a lot going on. I can't tell my sisters.

Sifiso: But we've been together for three weeks now.

Me: Not three weeks but a month.

Sifiso: Ohh yeah, you are right so tell your sisters about me.

Me: As if you told your loved ones about me. It's still early so there's no need to rush.

Sifiso: I told my loved ones about you. I really did.

Me: You are so fast.

Sifiso: It's because I really love you.

...

I kept quiet. I have not yet told Sifiso that I am still married and the truth is Sifiso is falling harder for me. Delano on the other hand can not stop calling me. It's really irritating. Sifiso spoke.

...

Sifiso: Are you there, babe?

Me: Yes honey, I am still here. Well... I love you too, and already you know that.

Sifiso: Of course I do.

Me: I'll talk to you later, okay?

Sifiso: Please come to my house now if you are not busy.

Me: Now?

Sifiso: Yes please.

Me: Okay fine. I'll come.

Sifiso: I'll send a car over to you.

Me: No need. I'll take a taxi.

Sifiso: No girlfriend of mine will take a taxi. I'll send a car or I'll come pick you up.

...

Pick me up?? Hell No!! Nolly might see him. Let me just tell him to send a car. I spoke.

...

Me: Baby, you can send a car. I'll be waiting.

Sifiso: Okay then.

Me: Do you still remember the address?

Sifiso: Of course I do.

Me: Great. I can't wait to see you.

Sifiso: That's me.

Me: Bye, honey.

Sifiso: Bye, honey.

Advertisement

26, 26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">...

He hung up. I was soooo happy. Sifiso really makes me happy but how can I get Delano to sign the divorce papers? I really want to be with Sifiso.

...

[Lexy]

Today is just a boring day so I thought that I should just listen to music at home. My phone rang as I was listening to music. It was Mish - when she changed her number she gave me the new one. Well we've been talking on the phone always.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Me: Hey hey.

Mish: Hey dear, how are you?

Me: I am fine thanks and you?

Mish: I am great thanks. May I please ask you a question?

Me: Of course.

Mish: How many sisters do you have?

Me: Three, why?

Mish: Just curious. What's their names?

Me: Leona, Keisha and Samantha.

...

Mish kept quiet so I spoke again.

...

Me: Are you there?

Mish: Yeah yeah. Sorry about that.

Me: It's okay.

Mish: Where do they live?

Me: My sisters?

Mish: Yes.

Me: Leona lives in SA with me. Sam and Keisha live in the US.

Mish: Do you only live with Leona?

Me: No. Well I used to but now dad is living with us.

Mish: Your dad? You never said anything about your dad to me.

Me: Well he always liked Sam and Keisha more than Leona and I so yeah dad is not my favorite person.

Mish: I understand so is your mom your favorite person?

Me: Well I don't hate her but she's also not my favorite person.

Mish: What's the name of your mom?

Me: It's Marla.

Mish: Mhmm... do you know a guy by the name Trey?

Me: No, why?

Mish: I was just asking.

Me: Mish, are you okay? Why are you asking me about my family?

Mish: Because I miss having a family.

Me: Ohh, well at least you have your sisters and your husband.

Mish: Yeah at least.

Me: Where's your mom and dad?

Mish: Let's not go there.

Me: Okay, I understand. Guess what??

Mish: Please tell me.

Me: My father is cheating on my mother with a lady by the name Malebo

...

Mish started coughing. I spoke the moment she stopped coughing.

...

Me: Are you okay?

Mish: Yes I am okay. I just didn't think that you'd tell me about your cheating father... like I didn't expect you to tell me such huge news.

Me: Well you are now my friend. I'll always tell you everything.

Mish: Thank you, honey but I have to go now.

Me: Can I at least see you tomorrow?

Mish: Fine but can you please come to the hotel? I want you to meet my husband.

Me: Okay no problem.

Mish: And don't let Aaron see you. Just don't tell anyone about my whereabouts.

Me: I won't. I promise.

Mish: Thanks honey. Bye.

Me: Bye dear.

...

She hung up.

...

[Mitchell / Mish]

Trey and I are staying at one of Trey's hotels around Johannesburg. I did everything I did because of Trey. I haven't been in contact with my loved ones for a month and it hurts. Trey is still failing to forgive his mother and I am also still failing to change his mind. Lexy and I get along so well. I never thought



that I'd get along with someone like Lexy. She trusts me with all her heart. I called her on the phone and started asking her about her family. The reason why I was asking her about her family was so I can get to know everything. The truth is I know Marla Anderson... I know Keisha Anderson, and I know Samantha Anderson. I met them so many times as Trey's family and they never liked me. I didn't know that Bob Anderson and Marla Anderson got two more daughters by the names Leona and Lexy. Trey also did not know. Trey and I have been working from home, and by home I'm talking about the hotel - Trey's hotel that is. Well we don't stay in a hotel room. There's a condo in the hotel so we stay in a condo in the last floor - it's quite cosy and beautiful. We enjoy staying here. Trey just finished taking a shower. I sat down and spoke to him as he was getting dressed.

...

Me: Trey?

Trey: Yes, baby?

Me: I really love you.

Trey: And I love you more.

Me: If you really love me you'll go see the queen.

Trey: Don't start.

Me: Babe, please.

Trey: No, Mish. You know what? Right now I don't have a family.

Me: You have a mother... a brother. You have everything and you can't see it.

Trey: I don't want to talk about this.

Me: Okay fine. Guess what?

Trey: Go ahead and tell me.

Me: Bob Anderson is cheating on Marla Anderson.

Trey: He's good at that.

Me: Guess who the mistress is.

Trey: Please tell me.

Me: It's Malebo.

Trey: Your mother?

Me: Yes.

Trey: How do you know?

Me: Lexy told me. Anderson is staying with Lexy and Leona.

Trey: Does Lexy know your mother?

Me: No. She doesn't know that Malebo is my mother.

Trey: So how do you know that she was talking about your mother?

Me: It's obvious. Come on, babe.

Trey: Well, I don't care.

Me: I also don't care but I am worried about the queen. Give her a chance. Let the queen tell us everything.

Trey: She didn't bury me but she believed that I was dead so no, I will not give her a chance. She never cared about me.

Me: Well I guess I was also wrong to give you a second chance. I think that I should just walk away from this relationship if you can't forgive your mother. I am the only one who can forgive people... why can't you do the same?

Trey: I forgave you for sleeping with Aaron.

Me: And I forgave you for sleeping with so many girls. I forgave you for cheating on me. I forgave you for almost killing me. Should I go on? I mean the list is endless.

...

Trey just kept quiet. I then spoke.

...

Me: I am going back to Aaron's house and I am never coming back to you. You and I are over.

Trey: Please don't say that. I'll go see the queen.

...

Huh? so easy? I should've said this a long time ago if I knew that he'd give in. I guess he really does not want to lose me.

...

Me: How about you say "I'll go see mom?"

Trey: Fine, Mitchell. I'll go see mom.

Me: When?

Trey: Tomorrow.

Me: Good. I'll definitely give you some 'Mish' for dinner.

Trey: Tonight?

Me: (Smiles) Tonight.

...

He smiled at me as I walked out. Well we haven't been intimate for soooooo long so I'll definitely give him some 'Mish' tonight. I really understand what Trey is going through. I was also going to be mad at the queen but sometimes you just have to forgive and move on. The queen loves Trey and it was evident the time we went to see her for the first time.

21

[Sifiso]

I was just watching TV when my beautiful woman walked in. She greeted me with a kiss and sat on my laps. I spoke.

...

Me: (Smiles) I'm happy that you came.

Tso: You know that I love you.

Me: Are you okay?

Tso: Yes I am okay baby, and you?

Me: I am fine, baby.

Tso: Why aren't you at work?

Me: Because I missed you, I just wanted to spend the day with you.

Tso: (Smiles) That's cute.

Me: Come with me but you have to close your eyes.

Tso: Where are you taking me to?

Me: Just come, stand up.

...

She stood up and closed her eyes. I then held her hand just so she won't fall. We went to the patio and I had organized a picnic for us. I helped her sit down and spoke.

...

Me: You can open your eyes now.

Tso: Are you sure?

Me: Yes, my baby.

Tso: Okay then.

...

She opened her eyes. I expected her to be happy but she started crying. I sat down next to her and spoke.

...

Me: What's wrong, Kitso? Don't you like it?

Tso: No baby, it's not like that.

Me: So why are you crying?

Tso: Because I am happy. I never thought that I'd have someone who'd love me like the way you love me and right now I feel so bad.

Me: Bad? Why?

Tso: Please don't be mad at me but I have to tell you something.

Me: Okay, I am listening.

Tso: I am still married and my husband does not want to sign the divorce papers.

Me: I know.

...

Kitso wiped off her tears and looked at me. She then spoke.

...

Tso: Huh? You know?

Me: Yes, I know.

Tso: How?

Me: My best friend told me.

Tso: I thought you had just arrived in SA the day I met you so, how come you have friends in SA?

Me: Best friend not friends.

Tso: Okay, how come you have a best friend in SA? It's so soon.

Me: (Smiles) Baby I arrived in SA from Canada. I was in Canada because of work. I was dealing with a very serious case in Canada so I stayed in Canada until the court gave a verdict.

Tso: Are you a lawyer?

Me: Yes... Advocate Marumo.

Tso: Wow, I didn't know. Well that's cute.

Me: Yeah... so won't you ask me who my best friend is?

Tso: Yeah, tell me.

Me: Aaron Banks.

Tso: Wonders shall never end!!!

Me: Yep... so, didn't he tell you that he'll get someone who'll help you take your husband to court?

Tso: He did.

Me: I am that person.

Tso: Noways!!!

Me: Yeah, babe. Prince Aaron is my best friend but I had already fallen in love with you even before I got to know that you are the same lady I am working on her case. When I was in Canada, Aaron told me about you and your sisters. He then asked me to help all of you take your husbands to court. I told him that it's fine, I'll do exactly that so he gave me your papers and I began doing my work. I also did some research but I couldn't find your pictures with your sisters anywhere. I only found the husbands' pictures. The day I arrived in SA I met you



at the mall and told myself that you are mine. You and I got along so well. Last week Aaron sent me your picture and your sisters' pictures and the truth is you and I were already dating. I was so angry when I found out that you never told me anything but I got over it because I knew that you wanted divorce from your husband. I've just been waiting for you to tell me the truth so thank you for telling me the truth today because it really means a lot.

Tso: Wow so aren't you mad at me?

Me: No I'm not. And I really love you. But I have a fear.

Tso: What fear?

Me: I fear that you might go back to your husband.

Tso: Never!!! You are the one I love now.

Me: But Mish went back to Trey.

Tso: Mish and Trey's love is real. I will never go back to Delano.

Me: I hope so.

Tso: Well, he can't stop calling me.

Me: Give me his number.

Tso: Why?

Me: I want to talk to him.

Tso: He's really dangerous, you know.

Me: Not dangerous than a man who is in love. Kitso, I love you and I'll do anything for you so give me the number.

Tso: (Smiles) Okay, let me send it to you later, my phone is in the house.

Me: Okay, babe.

Tso: Does Aaron know that you and I are together now?

Me: Yes, he knows. Aaron and I talk about everything. He's my best friend.

Tso: And he didn't tell me that he knows I am seeing someone. He's such a crook.

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: (Laughs) He is.

Tso: So do you also know that Mish and Trey are the prince and the princess?

Me: I know everything, babe.

Tso: So you and I are fine, right?

Me: More than fine. I'm very happy.

Tso: I am also very happy but can I ask?

Me: Sure, babe.

Tso: The first day we met you said that you are Tswana so why is your name Sifiso?

Me: (Laughs) It's just a name that my mom loves, and are you saying that I can't have a Zulu name just because I am Tswana?

Tso: No, that's not what I am saying. Look, I'll never hurt you and I promise.

Me: And I'll never hurt you. You are the one I love. You are the one I want. You are the one I'd do anything for.

Tso: (Smiles) Thank you.

Me: So can we enjoy our picnic?

Tso: Ohh, yessss!!

...

I smiled and kissed her forehead.

...

[Mitchell/ Mish]

Trey and I decided to just watch movies for the whole day. As we were watching movies, Mr Anderson phoned me. I put him on loudspeaker.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Me: What do you want?

Mr A: My daughter, please give me some money.

Me: Are you serious?

Mr A: Yes, Let's just call it a loan.

Me: Don't you have a wife and kids? I'm not your child.

Mr A: Honey, please.

Me: Don't you dare call me honey, your honey is Marla and Malebo.

Mr A: Malebo?

Me: What? Did you think that I don't know anything? I know a lot.

Mr A: There's nothing going on between your mother and I.

Me: Don't call her my mother, she's not my mother.

Mr A: Okay there's nothing going on between Malebo and I.

Me: I don't care.

Mr A: Please give me a little bit of my son's money.

Me: Which son?

Mr A: Trey.

Me: Do you have a son called Trey?

Mr A: I...

Me: I don't have Trey's money.

Mr A: But you have the Banks money.

Me: The Banks? What are you talking about?

Mr A: Shit... Uhm... Never mind.

Me: Bye, Anderson.

Mr A: Wait.

Me: What? Talk.

Mr A: I really need money.

Me: So am I your ATM?

Mr A: That's not what I'm saying.

Me: Ask Samantha for money, she's your eldest daughter, right?

Mr A: She's useless.

Me: Just like you.

...

I quickly hung up. I then switched off my phone and spoke to Trey.

...

Me: That rubbish of a man is broke.

Trey: Serves him right.

Me: He didn't even ask about you.

Trey: He believes that I am dead.

Me: Yes, but he was supposed to ask about how your funeral was.

Trey: Just leave him. He won't see me coming.

Me: No, he won't see us coming, we are in this together.

Trey: Thank you, baby.

Me: You don't have to thank me. Does he believe that with you "gone" I still have your family's money? Is that even possible?

Trey: I really don't know anything about my family's money. I don't want to lie.

Me: Mhmm. Well, let's do this together. Let's teach Anderson a lesson.

Trey: (Smiles) I love you so much.

Me: (Smiles) And I love you more.

...

Trey leaned in for a kiss. We shared a very passionate kiss. He then whispered.

...

Trey: I really love you.

Me: I know.

...

We continued kissing. It felt so great. I haven't felt this way for so long. I know that I said I'll give Trey some 'Mish' tonight but I couldn't help it, we couldn't help it. All of a sudden we were super naked. Trey made love to me. It was so amazing. I was soooo happy. God, please always protect my husband, he's my happiness.

...

To be continued...

22

[Aaron]

I was home around 17:00. I found Nolly crying. She was sitting outside, next to the pool. I sat next to her and spoke.

...

Me: Hey, what's going on?

Nolly: Hey, Aaron... I am good. Please don't worry about me.

Me: You can talk to me about anything.

Nolly: Aaron, I am pregnant. I am carrying Lungile's child.

Me: And you are going to be a great mother, you have us. We'll always be by your side.

Nolly: Thank you, Aaron.

Me: My phone is ringing, let me quickly answer it.

Nolly: Okay.

...

I answered my phone. I actually did not know the number that was calling me so I just answered.

...

[Phone Conversation]



Me: Hello?

Caller: Hey, Aaron. It's Mish.

Me: Mish?? Really??

Caller: Yes, if you are with my sisters please put me on loudspeaker.

Me: Okay, no problem.

...

Nolly heard me so I didn't have to tell her that I was talking to Mish. I put Mish on loudspeaker.

...

Me: You are on loudspeaker but Kitso is not around.

Mish: Where's she?

Me: She probably went to see her new boyfriend.

Nolly: What boyfriend?

Mish: Yes, what boyfriend, Aaron?

Me: Sifiso... Kitso is dating Sifiso.

Nolly: Who's that?

Me: Kitso will tell you when she's ready.

Mish: Sifiso? Well, he better not hurt my sister.

Nolly: We'll roast him alive.

Mish: True, sister.

Me: Relax, ladies. Sifiso is a great guy.

Nolly: And how do you know?

Me: Sifiso is my best friend. I trust him with my life.

Mish: That's great... Listen guys, I am sorry for just disappearing with Trey. Trey really needed some time away from everyone.

Me: We understand but where are you?

Mish: We are around and tomorrow we are going to the palace to see the queen. Trey is ready to listen to the queen, I made him understand.

Nolly: That's great.

Me: Thanks a lot, Mitchell.

Mish: It's okay. I gotta go.

Me: Can I please talk to Trey?

Mish: Okay, I'll call him now.

Me: Thank you.

...

I told Nolly that I'll talk to Trey in my bedroom so I went inside the house. I spoke to Trey like someone I knew for years. I guess he's willing to forgive the Banks family. Talking to my brother was the greatest thing ever.

...

[Kitso / Tso]

I really had a great day with my man. He's the most understanding and loving guy I've ever met. After our picnic romance, he made sure that he drives me back home. He went in with me because he said that he wanted to see Aaron. It was around 19:00 when we got to Aaron's place. We went in and found Aaron and Nolly eating whilst watching TV. We greeted everyone. Aaron and Sifiso were very happy to see one another. I sat down next to Sifiso. I just couldn't be away from him. He's my drug. Aaron then spoke.

...

Aaron: Bonolo, meet Sifiso, he's my best friend and Sifiso, meet Bonolo, she's my sister.

...

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Nolly and Sifiso shook hands. I then spoke.

...

Me: Nolly, Sifiso is my boyfriend.

Nolly: (Smiles) I know.

Me: Oh, and you are not mad at me?

Nolly: For what? You are old enough to make your own decisions.

Me: But I'm still married.

Nolly: I know and I understand the situation.

Me: Wow. Thank you sister.

Nolly: It's a pleasure, honey. I'll dish up for the two of you.

Me: No, no, it's okay. I'll do it.

Nolly: Okay, I'll help you then.

Me: Thanks.

...

We went to the kitchen. In the kitchen, Nolly and I spoke about and other things.

...

Me: Sister Nolly, I really love Sifiso.

Nolly: I can see how happy you are, babe. I am also happy for you.

Me: Thanks a lot, hey.

Nolly: Don't mention it, my dear.

Me: I pray that everything will work out for you.

Nolly: Don't worry about me. Do you know what makes me happy?

Me: What? Please tell me.

Nolly: The fact that my two younger sisters are very happy.

Me: You've always wanted Mish and I to be happy but when are you going to be happy?

Nolly: I am happy.

Me: You know what I'm talking about.

Nolly: If you are talking about Lungile, just know that I am done with him. I'm actually done with men.

Me: No, you need a man in your life.

Nolly: I do?

Me: Yes.

...

Nolly shook her head and spoke.

...

Nolly: No baby sis, you are so wrong. I only need my sisters in life.

Me: But it's not like Mish and I can give you the D.

Nolly: You can't give me the D but you can give me all the happiness I want, my child will also give me all the happiness in life.

Me: You are so stubborn.

Nolly: Thing is I don't know what you want me to do.

Me: I want you to get a man. Have Aaron as your partner.

...

Nolly laughed and spoke.

...

Nolly: Aaron, the lawyer? Aaron, the prince?

Me: Yes.

Nolly: Aaron sees me as his sister and I also see him as my brother.

Me: Change that.

Nolly: No.

Me: Why?

Nolly: I don't love him like that.

Me: But you get along.

Nolly: Just like the way you get along with him.

Me: Gosh, you are so stubborn.

...

I then took the tray of food and left the kitchen. Nolly followed me. Nolly is really something else. It's like she enjoys the lonely life.

...

To be continued...

23

[Tremaine / Trey]

It's finally the next day. Mish and I got ready for the palace. We got in my car and I drove to the palace. Well, I still remember the way. On our way to the palace, Mish spoke.

...

Mish: Baby, are you ready?

Me: More than ready.

Mish: Wow, someone is growing up.

Me: (Laughs) Really?

Mish: Yes.

Me: Don't push it.

Mish: (Laughs) I know that the truth hurts. Uhm, can I ask?

Me: Yes, go ahead.

Mish: What's your plan?

Me: What are you talking about?

Mish: Mr Anderson.

Me: I'm still a weak man, baby. I don't have any plan. I even feel like just walking away.



Mish: I didn't get married to a weak man. Do you know what's going to happen once Anderson knows the truth?

Me: What truth?

Mish: That you are not dead.

Me: What's going to happen?

Mish: He's going to come after all of us.

Me: I know.

Mish: So you must have a plan, babe or else I'll find myself a real man - someone who can protect me.

...

My face changed. I stopped the car next to the road and looked at Mish. I spoke.

...

Me: What did you say?

Mish: You heard me.

Me: Do you mean that?

Mish: Yes, I do.

Me: What should I do, Mish?

Mish: I want my man back. The weak man that you are can't be my man.

Me: What do you want me to do?

Mish: Be a real man and think like a real man. Anderson family betrayed you and you just want to walk away? Don't you know that revenge is sweet?

Me: Baby, thing is revenge can get all of us killed.

Mish: Tremaine Leano Banks, wake up. Bob Anderson will still come after us just so he can shut our mouths.

Me: You are right.

Mish: So be a man.

Me: You are such a bad influence, do you know that?

Mish: And that's why you love me.

Me: The old Trey will be back very soon. I promise you. Just give this weak Trey a chance to heal. I am a very broken man at a moment.

Mish: I know. I'll wait for the old Trey but he shouldn't come back with the monstrous Trey. I just want back the man I fell in love with - My brave man.

Me: And you'll get him.

Mish: You are no longer a gangster, right?

Me: I am not a gangster and I am not going back there.

Mish: Thank you so much for everything.

Me: No, Princess Mitchell... Thank you so much for everything.

Mish: Don't mention it. Can you please do me a favour?

Me: Anything for you.

Mish: Anything?

Me: Yes, Anything!!!

Mish: I don't want double barrel surnames anymore, I just want your surname. Moraka is my mom's surname so I don't want it anymore. I also don't want Anderson surname, I just want your surname and I am talking about your real surname.

Me: What??? Banks???

Mish: Yes.

Me: But I...

Mish: You said anything for me.

Me: Mish though... Okay fine. Can I at least hear the queen's story and make a decision after that?

Mish: Fair enough, countryside prince.

Me: (Laughs) What??

Mish: Mhmmm.

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">...

We smiled and shared a kiss. I started driving again. My wife is right, I can't just walk away because Anderson will still come after me and all my loved ones. I have to do something and do it very soon.

...

[The Queen]

Aaron had already told me that Leano wants to see me today so the palace was very busy today. Excitement made me tell everyone in the palace that my long lost son will be here so a small ceremony was going to take place that's why it got busy in the palace. Aaron, Bonolo and Kitso arrived first. Well, Aaron's best friend was also here, he's a very great guy and he has always been a good friend to my son. As we were just sitting down, waiting for the princess and the prince, I spoke.

...

Me: Aaron, do you think that I'll lose my son again?

Aaron: No, mom. Leano will definitely forgive us.

Me: Do you think that he's really coming?

Aaron: Yes, mother.

Me: I am nervous.

Aaron: And it's normal to be nervous.

...

A guard came in and spoke.

...

Guard: Your Highness, they are here.

Me: Very good, please let them in.

Guard: Yes, your Highness.

Me: Tell the maids to welcome them in a royal style.

Guard: Okay, your majesty.

Aaron: No mother, that's not a good idea. Leano is still not okay so he doesn't need all of this, give him some time to get used to everything.

Me: (Smiles) You are right, my son.

Aaron: Yes, mother.

...

The guard left. After few minutes, Princess Mitchell and Prince Leano walked in with the guard. They greeted and sat down.

Everyone from the palace was still busy preparing for the ceremony so I guess I had to talk to Leano. I must say that Aaron, Bonolo and Kitso were very happy to see Leano and Princess Mitchell. Aaron introduced Sifiso to Leano and Princess Mitchell. I spoke.

...

Me: Son, I am happy that you came.

Leano: Mhmm.

Me: I am really sorry. Guard, why are you still here?

Guard: Uhm... sorry your majesty.

...

The guard who came in with the princess and the prince then left. I spoke.

...

Me: Leano, your father was with you the day he died but when his body was found, you were not with him. We did everything to find you but the police told us that we should move on, they said that you might have died as well.

Leano: Wasn't I just a new born baby? What was my father doing with me? Where were you?

Mish: Tremaine, are you saying that a father does not have the right to be with his new born baby?

Leano: That's not what I am saying.

Mish: Can you just listen to the queen, please?

Leano: Sorry, babe.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you, Princess Mitchell.

Mish: (Smiles) Pleasure.

Me: Well, I know that after 4 days of giving birth to you, I left you with your father but what could I have done? Aaron was just 4 years old and he was kidnapped. Well I realized later that it was a set up. Anderson kidnapped Aaron and called me but he had changed his voice. I was told that if I don't bring 1 million dollar to a certain place before 15:00 I'll lose Aaron. Anderson also told me not to involve police. He was watching my every move, I mean he kept on telling me that he knows what I was doing so he also said that I should leave my husband behind with you. My husband got stubborn and tried to call the police but a bullet is what he got. Yes, Anderson was aware of everything that my husband and I were up to so the moment my husband tried to call the police, he got shot on his shoulder. I had to obey the rules. I gave 1 million dollar to Anderson's men but I didn't see their faces. They also gave Aaron to me. As I was driving back to my house I got a call from the police and

they told me that my husband was found dead. I rushed home. It was the truth, I lost my husband and you were nowhere to be found, Leano. The police assured me that they'll find you and they left. As I was crying, I thought about everything that happened and asked myself how the police knew about my husband. I asked myself how they got inside my house and why they left my husband's dead body with me. I quickly called the mortuary and I got all the help I needed. I called other police and gave a statement. I then realized that the people who called me and told me that I lost my husband were not real cops. I couldn't understand if they took you or not but after 10 months the real cops could not find you and I also couldn't find you so I believed that you died. I am very sorry.

Leano: Wow, you really kept on looking for me?

Me: Yes, I did.

Leano: I am sorry then. Thanks for telling me the whole story.

Me: I love you. You are my son.

Leano: Well, it's going to take me a lot of time to get used to everything but the truth is I have forgiven you.

Me: Do you mean that?

Leano: Yes, I do and I'd like to change my surname if you don't mind.



Me: You want to be a Banks?

Leano: Yes, Please.

...

To be continued...

24

[The Queen]

I was soooo happy. I smiled and spoke.

...

Me: I don't mind at all. I am so happy. Thank you, my son.

Leano: (Smiles) It's okay.

...

When Prince Leano got here, he was not smiling but now he just smiled at me and I could tell that he wasn't faking his smile. I couldn't help it so I went closer to him and hugged him. The most wonderful thing was when he hugged me back. I shed tears as I spoke.

...

Me: I wish your father could have told me that Anderson was going to take you away from us.

Leano: Well, I guess father did not know that he was going to be killed on the day he was killed.

Mish: Your Highness, Your son is right. I agree that the King knew that his life was in danger but he obviously did not expect to die on the day he died.

Aaron: Yes, mother. Don't be too hard on yourself. Everything will be fine.

...

Leano and I broke off the hug. I was just so happy. I looked at Aaron and realized that his nails were not neat. They were not long but they were just not neat and it's unacceptable, my sons always have to be neat. I spoke.

...

Me: Aaron, please shape your nails and take good care of them.

Aaron: Thought as much. I'll be right back.

Mish: I will join you, Prince Aaron. I just want to help you with your nails.

Aaron: You are the best. Thank you.

Mish: Let's go before I change my mind.

Aaron: But my nails are not that bad hey, they are just skew.

Mish: Yes but I want them.

Aaron: Huh?? You want my nails??

Mish: I meant to say I want your nails to be neat so that the queen can be happy.

Aaron: I see you love my mother more now. Mhmmm I'm jealous.

Mish: (Laughs) Prince Aaron, let's go.

...

Princess Mitchell and Prince Aaron left us. Today is the happiest day of my life. My sons are with me and one of them married a great girl. What more can I ask for? My sister also arrived. I was happy to see her as always. She greeted everyone and sat down. I introduced her to everyone and to my son, Leano. Life is going to be great. I know that my husband is not around anymore but at least I found my son.

...

[Mitchell / Mish]

Aaron and I went to Aaron's bedroom. When we got to his bedroom I began cutting his nails and shaping them. We got done and Aaron spoke.

...

Aaron: I'll get rid of them, give them to me.

Me: Heyyyy, don't worry. Let me act like your maid and take care of you.

Aaron: Mhmm... Thank you, maid Mitchell.

## Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">...

I just laughed and went to Aaron's bathroom. When I got to the bathroom, I covered the nails with a toilet paper and slid the toilet paper in my pocket. I flushed the toilet just so Aaron can think that I was flushing the nails away. I walked out of bathroom and spoke to Aaron.

...

Me: Let's go to the others. Your nails are looking good now.

Aaron: (Smiles) Thank you hey.

Me: (Smiles) Don't mention it.

Aaron: Smart girl, let's go.

Me: Smart boy... sure, let's go.

Aaron: Heyyy, I am older than you. I am your brother.

Me: That's not what you were saying when you were enjoying me in bed.

Aaron: (Laughs) Whatever.

...

We laughed, held hands and went to the others. When we got to the others we had a small celebration. It was really a nice

day. My husband looked very happy and that made me happy. How can I be troubled when my man is happy? The queen's sister is also a darling, I just wonder how she got to be friends with Marla Anderson. Well, The Banks family is now my family and it is my right as a daughter in-law to make things right. I took the Queen's wine glass. She was drinking wine with a crystal glass. Taking it wasn't easy but I managed to take it for the DNA testing. Now I am left with Trey's nails or saliva but I am not worried, he's my husband and I'll get anything from him. It was now getting late so we said our goodbyes and left the palace. Trey and I decided that we'll sleep at Aaron's place so we followed everyone. On our way to Aaron's place, my jealous husband spoke.

...

Trey: Mitchell?

...

I knew that something was wrong. Mostly he calls me Mish or baby so once he calls me by my full name I just know that he's not happy with something I did. I spoke.

...

Me: Look Trey, whatever it is, I am really sorry.

Trey: Really?? Are you??

Me: Yes, I am.

Trey: Do you love him?

Me: Love who?

Trey: My brother?

Me: Yes, I do.

...

He looked at me with so much anger. He even almost hit a car that was driving before us. He stopped the car next to the road and got out. He came to my side and got me out of the car. I then spoke.

...

Me: What's wrong?

Trey: You just said that you love Aaron and now you are asking me what's wrong? You and I will die together.

Me: Huh?

Trey: WHAT????

...

Yes I said that I love Aaron but I didn't know that Trey was talking about the love he's talking about. I love Aaron like my

brother, he's just like an elder brother I never had. Trey took out his gun and pointed it at me.

...

To be continued...



25

[Mitchell / Mish]

I was now crying but I managed to speak.

...

Me: I don't love Aaron the way you think I love him. He's your brother and I love him as a brother. Put the gun away please. We are in public and people might see us.

...

He put the gun away and spoke.

...

Trey: Get in the car.

Me: Baby, lis...

Trey: (Shouts) I said that you should get in the car.

...

To avoid creating a scene, I went inside the car. Trey also got in. He looked like the real 'Prince Gangster' - I saw the old, abusive Trey in his eyes. I was so scared and crying. God knows that I love Trey so much and I'd do anything for him even after pointing a gun at me in public. My love for Trey is real, I don't have any feelings for Aaron and I think that what I had for Aaron was just infatuation. I am over Aaron so to see Trey

treating me like this really breaks my heart. I couldn't speak so when he kept on asking questions I couldn't answer. I was seriously crying and I don't think people can speak properly when they are really crying. He started driving again. We were supposed to go straight but Trey turned left at the robots so I knew that we were going back to our condo. My sisters phoned me but because I was crying, I couldn't answer the phone. My sisters probably wanted to ask where Trey and I disappeared to. Trey took my phone and switched it off, he also switched off his phone. When we got to the hotel, I made sure that I hide my face with a scarf so that people won't see me crying. Trey was coming behind me. I finally went inside our Condominium and let it all out. Trey came inside and came closer to me. He was looking very evil. I spoke.

...

Me: Tt-Trey, iffff if you-you think that I am go-going to allow you to-to-to to beat me uu-up then you mussst think twtw-twice.

...

He wiped off my tears and gave me water. I drank the water and looked at him as he kissed my forehead. I was shocked. What's going on here? He then spoke.

...

Trey: I love you and I would kill for you, honestly.

...

He then went to the bathroom and took a shower. After getting done in the bathroom, he came out and got dressed. He took his wallet and the car keys and started walking away. Just before he reached the door, I spoke.

...

Me: Where are you going?

Trey: I love you and I would kill for you, honestly.

Me: I am not in love with Aaron, I am in love with you.

...

I was able to talk but just when I wanted Trey to listen to me, he just walked out. And my phone is also not here

Advertisement

Trey probably left it in the car. I went to the bathroom and ran myself a hot bubble bath with a little bit of bath salt. I had a bottle of wine and a glass with me so I got undressed and got in the bath tub. I relaxed in the bath tub and enjoyed my wine.

...

[Kitso / Tso]

We've been trying to contact Mish and Trey but their phones are off. We were so worried, I mean where are they now? They

were supposed to arrive here with us. We arrived at Aaron's house like an hour ago so where are the two lovebirds? I spoke to Aaron.

...

Me: Aaron, what if something happened to them? An accident maybe?

Nolly: Kitso, don't say that.

Aaron: Relax, Kitso. They will soon be here.

Me: No, don't lie to me.

Sifiso: Baby, relax. Everything will be fine. Trey and Mish are coming.

Me: I just don't feel well.

Aaron: Uhm... I have a telephone number of where Trey and Mish are staying lately. Trey gave it to me yesterday so let me call and see if they'll answer.

Me: How are they going to answer if they are not at their Condo?

Sifiso: Exactly, how are they going to answer the phone?

Aaron: I'll just try. Maybe they went to the Condo.

...

Aaron tried calling Trey and Mish's Condo but the call didn't go through. We got super worried. I spoke.

...

Me: What if Anderson is behind everything?

Aaron: It's possible.

Nolly: So what are we waiting for? Let's call the cops.

Sifiso: I agree with Bonolo.

Me: Guys, wait.

Sifiso: Wait for what?

Me: I...

...

My phone rang. Delano is really something else. Why would he call me at this time? I mean It was now 19:00 and my man is here. I answered.

...

To be continued...

26

[Kitso / Tso]

[Phone Conversation]

Me: What do you want from me?

Lano: Baby, please come back to me.

Me: I am done with you.

Lano: Your boyfriend called me last night and today morning, did you really have to give him my number?

Me: He's my boyfriend so I'll do anything to get you off my back.

Lano: And I am your husband.

Me: Just according to the law but very soon I'll be free.

Lano: We shall see.

Me: Bye, Delano.

Lano: Let me tell you something, you are going to die with me because you are my wife.

Me: You wish.

Lano: It's the truth.

Me: You won't kill me, you won't.

Lano: Yes, I won't but it will kill you.

Me: What are you talking about?

Lano: I am HIV positive, I found out about a week ago.

...

The phone slipped off my ear and fell on the floor. Tears streamed down my face. Everyone asked me what was wrong but I just cried. As I was crying, I realized that Delano was still talking on the phone so I picked up my phone and hung up on him. I then called our (Delano and I) doctor. I wiped off my tears. She answered.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Doc: Hey, Mrs Moraka-Louis, how can I help you?

Me: Look doc, I know that I shouldn't be calling you this late but please tell me if what my husband told me is the truth or not.

Doc: What did your husband say?

Me: He said that he's HIV positive.

Doc: Oh, yes it's true. Did he only just tell you today?

Me: Yes.

Doc: Oh, well I am sorry. I asked him to tell you sooner.

Me: Does that mean that I am also HIV positive?

Doc: It's possible but...

...

I hung up. I was so heartbroken. How can Delano do this to me? Am I not allowed to get happiness? Everyone heard me talking to the doctor so they were speechless and shocked. I was crying so much and ran out of the house. I just kept on running and it was dark. I really didn't know where I was going. Life is so cruel.

...

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">[Mitchell / Mish]

I finally took a bath after an hour and got done with everything. I was worried about Trey so I reached for the telephone and tried to call him but I realized that the telephone was not working. It was all Trey's doings. And he's the only one who can fix the telephone. What am I going to do now? How am I going to get hold of Trey and my sisters? I walked out of the bedroom and went to the kitchen door but when I got there, it was locked. How can Trey do this to me? I went back to the bedroom and just sat in bed.

...

[Lungile / Lungi]



I was driving back to my house when I almost hit some girl with a car. I quickly got out of the car and ran to her. She was crying. I held her hands and spoke.

...

Me: Heyy, I am very sorry.

Her: It's okay.

...

Well the old Lungile was not going to apologize but I have been going to anger management classes and for counseling so I am a better man now. I really don't know why I was a monster. Being a monster made me lose the best woman in life. Bonolo really loved me and I didn't appreciate her but I am going to apologize to her and mend our broken marriage. I spoke.

...

Me: Where are you going? Let me take you home.

...

She looked closely at me and spoke.

...

Her: Lungile??

Me: Kitso??

Tso: Uhm... I have to go.

Me: Please wait.

Tso: You are a monster so let go of my hands.

...

I refused to let go of her hands. I just didn't want her to run away. I mean, she wasn't looking good at all. She was in tears. I spoke.

...

Me: What's going on?

Tso: Nothing.

Me: Look, Kitso... I am not a monster anymore and please forgive me for everything wrong I did.

Tso: You are apologizing to the wrong person.

...

I wiped off her tears and spoke.

...

Me: I know. So how's she?

Tso: Bonolo is fine without you.

Me: I really miss her.

Tso: Do you miss her or you miss hitting her?

Me: I told you that I am no longer a monster. I've been going to anger management classes and counseling. Guess what? I also went for rehab and I am perfectly fine now.

Tso: I don't believe you.

...

To be continued...

27

[Lungile / Lungi]

I let go of her hands and went back to the car to get papers that shows that I was telling the truth. I showed her the papers but she couldn't see properly because it was dark so we went to my car and I turned on the light. She was so shocked. I spoke.

...

Me: So can I drive you to wherever you are going now?

Tso: You mean that you have changed?

Me: Yes.

Tso: So if you really changed, can you please call Nolly and apologize to her?

Me: Not today, I am still ashamed.

Tso: I see.

Me: So where are you going?

Tso: Nowhere.

Me: What's bothering you?

Tso: I am HIV+.

Me: What??? Why do you have to joke like that???

Tso: I am not joking. Delano gave me a disease now I don't know if my boyfriend will still be with me.

Me: I am really sorry but are you sure of everything?

Tso: Yes I am.

Me: Did you get tested?

Tso: No but Delano and our doctor told us.

Me: When?

Tso: Like an hour ago. I've been running for an hour and I wasn't even aware.

Me: Did the doctor test you?

Tso: No, she told me over the phone.

Me: How can she tell you something so serious over the phone?

Tso: She had to. She's my good doctor and she knew that I was troubled. I wasn't going to be able to wait for tomorrow. I...

...

She kept quiet and looked at me.

...

Me: What?

Tso: I don't even know why I am telling you all of this.

Me: Well I guess you forgave me for everything and now you see me as your older brother.

Tso: (Laughs) Well let's hope that Nolly will forgive you.

Me: Yes, let's hope so.

Tso: If you are lying to me about changing then I'll be the one to deal with you.

Me: Done.

Tso: Good.

Me: I'm taking you to the hospital now.

Tso: For what?

Me: You must get tested.

Tso: No, I already know that I am sick.

Me: Heyyyy, don't say that. Just be positive.

Tso: Whatever, Lungile. I am already positive... HIV positive.

Me: You need to stop being like that.

...

I drove off to the hospital. Truth is I was hurt by what Kitso told me. Nobody deserves to get such a disease especially from a cheating partner. Luckily when we got to the hospital my doctor was there. He didn't waste time, he helped us. Kitso

tested negative. We were supposed to get the results after two days but Kitso was so troubled, I asked the doctor to give us the results today. He was the one who went to the lab and did all the work. We were very grateful. Kitso spoke.

...

Tso: Doc, so does that mean my doctor lied to me?

Doc: No. Maybe your husband is indeed HIV+ but you are not.

Me: And Kitso, it's possible that Delano got the disease recently and you were obviously not in the picture.

Tso: Yeah, you are right.

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: I told you to be positive.

Tso: (Smiles) Thank you, big brother and thank you soooo much doctor.

Doc: It's okay, please always be safe.

Tso: I will.

...

I smiled, did Kitso just call me big brother? Wow, if Kitso can forgive me maybe my wife can also do the same. Kitso and I left

the hospital. She looked so happy so that also made me happy.  
I spoke.

...

Me: So can I take you home now?

Tso: Yes, you can but can't we go to a restaurant and have something to eat first? I am really starving.

Me: (Smiles) Sure.

...

I drove off and we went to this other Italian restaurant. We sat down and placed our order. After few minutes, we got our meal. We started eating and chatting.

...

Tso: I wonder why you brought me to Nolly's favorite restaurant:

Me: Well, because I wanted to buy her something to eat using you. You will give the food to her, right?

Tso: (Giggles) Sure. Takeaway for everyone, it's on you.

Me: Huh? Who's everyone?

Tso: (Smiles) Don't worry, I will place the order for takeaway. That's all you should know.



Me: So who's your boyfriend? You said something about your boyfriend when we were...

Tso: His name is Sifiso. Gosh, where's my phone? Sifiso obviously tried to call me. Or did I leave it at Aaron's house? I really can't remember anything.

Me: And I wasn't with you.

Tso: Can I please use your phone?

Me: Sure.

...

I gave her my phone and she called her boyfriend. I've actually never seen Kitso this happy. This Sifiso guy must be a great guy. He really knows how to keep a woman happy. I heard Kitso talking to him and she was smiling like never before. After talking to Sifiso, she gave me the phone and spoke.

...

Tso: Thank you.

Me: Don't mention it.

Tso: Everyone is okay now.

Me: That's good, now eat your food.

...

We ate our food. I made sure that I buy something for Nolly and send it with Kitso. I really miss my wife. Well, I bought takeaway for “everyone”. I guess “everyone” is Aaron and Sifiso.

...

[Mitchell / Mish]

Trey finally arrived. I was not sleeping but I pretended to be asleep. He kissed my cheek and spoke.

...

Trey: I know that you are not sleeping, can we please talk?

...

I just ignored him. He kissed my lips and started tickling me. I couldn't help it, I giggled and opened my eyes. He smiled and spoke.

...

Trey: I am sorry.

Me: No, I am sorry. I shouldn't have said that I love Aaron.

Trey: Can I please finish talking?

Me: Get off me then, I need to go to the bathroom, I'll be right back.

Trey: Why are you running away from me?

...

Trey expects me to be happy now that he's calm and apologizing, does it work like that? No, it doesn't. He refused to get off me so I spoke.

...

To be continued...

28

[Mitchell / Mish]

...

Me: Before you left, you said that you would kill for me so tell me, did you kill him?

Trey: No, I just hurt him.

Me: But why Trey?

Trey: (Smiles) I am joking.

Me: So where are you coming from?

Trey: I was downstairs.

Me: You are such a liar.

Trey: I love you.

Me: Well, you have a funny way of showing it.

Trey: Come on, baby. You know that I have loose screws in my head.

Me: That one is true and I know it.

Trey: So do you forgive me?

Me: Please give me my phone.

Trey: It's not with me.

Me: Where is it?

Trey: My car.

Me: Tremaine, I want my phone right now. I have to call my loved ones.

Trey: Okay, let's go get it.

...

We went out and got my phone. I switched it on and I immediately got a call from Lexy. I answered.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Me: Hey, you.

Lexy: Mish, my father was shot and my mother got arrested, the police thinks that she shot father.

Me: You are joking, right?

Lexy: No, I am not.

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: But isn't your mother in the US?

Lexy: All of my family is in SA, they arrived in the morning.

Me: So where's Malebo?

Lexy: Babe, it's a long story, can we meet tomorrow?

Me: No problem.

Lexy: I'll come to your man's hotel.

...

I was happy but I just had to be there for Lexy so that she can think that I don't have anything against her family. I smiled and spoke.

...

Me: Okay, dear.

Lexy: I have to go, bye.

Me: Bye, my love and please be good.

Lexy: Thanks, honey.

...

She hung up. I went back to the condo and Trey followed me. I went straight to bed. Trey spoke.

...

Trey: You look happy, what's going on?

Me: Shouldn't I be happy?

Trey: I didn't say that.

Me: Well Bob Anderson got shot and Marla Anderson is arrested.

Trey: Oh.

Me: Oh??

Trey: Tell me, is Bob dead?

Me: Gosh, I forgot to ask. I'll find out tomorrow.

Trey: (Smiles) I'm not a weakling man after all.

Me: Huh??

...

He kissed my cheek and switched off the lamp that was close to him. I did the same. Trey is really weird, it's like he didn't even hear what I said. "I'm not a weakling man after all" like really though? I mean what was he on about?

...

To be continued...

[Tremaine / Trey]

It's a good thing that Anderson did not die. Now let's see how he'll get out of this mess, I mean all the companies that he is owning are literally collapsing. He's broke and his beautiful Marla is arrested for shooting him. Nice one Trey, nice one. I woke up only to find Mish not sleeping next to me. I went to the bathroom and she wasn't there as well. I guess she's in the kitchen. I kept myself hygienic clean and went to the kitchen but she wasn't there. As I was about to call her, she walked in. I was relieved, I mean for a moment I thought that she left me. She greeted me with a kiss. I must say that she was in a good mood. I spoke.

...

Me: Someone is in a good mood.

Mish: Did you eat?

Me: No, I didn't but I'll call room service.

Mish: We are not in a hotel room. We are in my husband's condo, in my husband's hotel so can't I prepare breakfast for my husband?

...



Mish was really acting strange. She wasn't like this last night. What happened now? Breakfast? Does she want to kill me? I spoke.

...

Me: Aren't you mad at me?

Mish: It's a new day, honey. I am absolutely fine.

Me: Where are you coming from?

Mish: The hospital.

Me: Are you pregnant?

Mish: I wish.

Me: So why are you excited?

Mish: I will get the DNA tests the day after tomorrow but how will I return the queen's glass?

Me: I thought as much. I saw the glass in your bag and Aaron's nails so I knew that you were going to do all of this.

Mish: And you should be proud of me. I don't want anyone to lie to you like Anderson did. It's not like I don't believe Aaron and Queen Mitchell, I just wanted to make sure.

Me: And that's good. You are smart so thank you.

Mish: Anything for my husband.

Me: I am really blessed to have you as a life partner, do you know that?

Mish: Yep, I know. My sisters will be here tonight, I invited them.

Me: Okay, baby.

Mish: And Lexy will also be here in 30 minutes.

Me: I haven't met her but already I don't like her.

Mish: You are so mean.

Me: Sorry but it's how I feel.

Mish: Maybe you don't like her because she's Anderson's daughter.

Me: Maybe.

Mish: She's also a plastic.

Me: (Laughs) I thought you don't like such people.

Mish: I don't. I also don't know how I ended up with a plastic. I guess I wanted some information from her.

Me: You should be a journalist.

Mish: (Smiles) Get outta here. Let me quickly prepare breakfast.

Me: Can I help?

Mish: Babe, you can't even fry eggs so how exactly are you going to help me?

Me: You'll teach me.

Mish: You are really a brat, all thanks to royalty.

Me: Heyyy it's not royalty. It's Anderson.

Mish: Both.

...

She then laughed at me. I ran after her. We now started playing and forgot about breakfast but Mish gave me the best breakfast ever - we made love on the floor. It was really priceless.

...

[Bonolo / Nolly]

I was watching TV when Kitso joined me. She smiled and spoke.

...

Tso: Please forgive Lungile.

Me: And then? What's all this?

Tso: You need him, sister.

Me: I don't. Why do you keep on saying "need"? I don't need any man.

Tso: Do you still love him?

...

I kept quiet. Kitso spoke.

...

Tso: No need to answer me, I got my answer.

Me: I don't love him.

Tso: You are lying.

Me: I'm not.

Tso: Do you think that you'd ever forgive him?

Me: No.

Tso: What if he's a better man now?

Me: Did you see him last night? Is that why you brought me my favorite meal from my favorite Italian restaurant?

Tso: You are wrong.

Me: No, I'm not. When you left the house you didn't even have your bag so how did you buy me that food? Need I remind you that the food from that restaurant is very expensive? Where did you get the money?

Tso: I know that I am not working but I am not broke.

Me: My point is, you didn't have your handbag with you.

Tso: I had my ATM card with me. It was in my pocket.

Me: You are such a liar.

Tso: I'm not.

Me: Fine then.

Tso: Are you happy?

Me: Very happy, why?

Tso: I'd also love to be a mother. I'd like Sifiso to be the father of my child.

Me: But he should marry you first, right?

Tso: Of course, sister but what if he'll take years to propose?

Me: How many years?

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Tso: More than five years.

Me: If a guy really loves you he should just take a year then marry you.

Tso: I think you are right.

Me: I have to go to a check up, will you go with me?

Tso: Sure.

Me: Sifiso slept here, right?

Tso: Yes, why?

Me: Did he sleep in your room?

Tso: (Laughs) No. He slept with Aaron.

Me: Please don't get pregnant and before you have unprotected sex with Sifiso just go for testing together.

Tso: (Laughs) Why do you have to make me feel uncomfortable?

Me: (Laughs) Sorry.

Tso: Well I haven't had unprotected sex with him.

Me: Good. I don't want you to get hurt. Delano is now sick because he was careless.

Tso: Yeah. God knows that I don't give a damn. Delano used to have sex with so many girls. Sometimes he'd have sex with them in my presence. He really brought everything upon himself.

Me: That's true. Let's go now.

Tso: Sure. Is Aaron and Sifiso gone?

Me: Yeah, they left in the morning.

Tso: Oh yeah, they went to finalize our divorce.

Me: What? Without us? How?

Tso: I don't know but I don't want to be there. I don't want to see Delano.

Me: Uhm... let's go then.

...

Kitso and I left. Off to the doctor we were.

...

[Lexy]

I went to see Mish at the hotel. She took me inside her beautiful condo. We sat down and spoke.

...

Me: Where's your husband?

Mish: At work, why?

Me: I haven't met him but already I am scared of him.

Mish: (Laughs) Relax, he's a very great man and he won't be here until 17:00.

Me: Okay then.

Mish: So what happened?

Me: Father was at Malebo's house when everyone arrived at our house (Me and Leona's house) so everyone wanted to know where father is. Leona told everyone that father has got a girlfriend and mom got angry. At night my mom received a call from someone, we don't know what the person said but my mom was really fuming. She then took a gun and left the house. When mom is angry she can do anything so we didn't follow her. After 1 hour she arrived at home and she was crying. She also had blood all over her clothes and hands. We asked her what's wrong and she said that someone shot our father and that it was not her or Malebo. She even said that Malebo is Mitchell's mother, trust me when I say that I was lost. I don't know which Mitchell she was talking about. Just as she was still talking, police came in and arrested her.

Mish: Wow, I am sorry, babe and I think that Malebo might be my mom. I am Mitchell, remember?

Me: What?? You??

Mish: Yes, but I don't get along with mom. Actually my sisters and I don't get along with our mother, she's a monster. She loves money so much.

Me: Wow, I am speechless.

Mish: Are you not angry at me?

Me: Not at all.



Mish: Thank you. You are a very nice person.

Me: Thanks.

Mish: And I think that you are the right person for Aaron.

Me: (Smiles) Really?

Mish: Yeah. You love him, right?

Me: Yes, but my sister also loves him.

Mish: Don't worry. She won't get him, Aaron is yours.

...

A voice came from the door's direction; "No one from the Anderson family will get Aaron, not even you, Lexy." Mish and I looked at the door and there was a very handsome man standing there. Mish spoke.

...

Mish: Babe, why are you here?

...

Oh, I guess he's Mish's husband. He closed the door and came inside. Mish asked again.

...

Mish: Tremaine, why are you here?

Trey: I forgot a very important file and I've been trying to call you.

Mish: Sorry, I didn't hear the phone.

Trey: Of course you didn't. I mean how can you hear the phone when you are busy lying to your best friend?

Me: Uhm... Hey, I am...

Trey: Excuse me, don't talk to me. I am not your friend.

Me: Mish, I think I should get going.

Trey: That would be great. Go!!

Mish: Baby but...

Trey: But nothing, Mish.

...

I took my bag and stood up. I then spoke to Mish.

...

Me: I have to go. I'll call you later, babe.

Mish: Okay and please forgive my husband.

Me: It's okay, babe.

Mish: I'll walk you out.

...

Mish stood up and hugged me. As we were about to go, Trey pulled Mish by the hand so I guess he didn't want Mish to walk me out. I left on my own.

...

To be continued...



30

[Mitchell / Mish]

I must say that my husband was really rude to the plastic girl...  
Uhm, I mean Lexy. I stood before him and spoke.

...

Me: You were rude to her.

Trey: Listen here, wife... When I left this place last night, I was going to kill Aaron but something told me that everything is Anderson's fault so I cried about everything and prayed to God. Tell me do I ever cry or pray?

Me: No.

Trey: Well, I cried so much last night and prayed in my car. Do you know why I cried and prayed?

Me: No, I don't. Please tell me.

Trey: I cried because I was going to kill Aaron. I then realized that what I was about to do was wrong. I sat in my car and told myself that my wife is not in love with my brother. I told myself that I misunderstood my wife so I prayed and asked God for forgiveness. As I was praying something told me to go after the Anderson family so you are very lucky that I didn't shoot that Lexy chick. Wife, I am going after the Anderson family and I won't leave anyone out.

Me: Whaaaaat?? You can't, baby.

Trey: Yes, wife I can and I will.

Me: Stop calling me wife. I have a name.

Trey: You told me to be strong and avenge his death.

Me: Whose death?

Trey: My father.

Me: Baby, it looks like you misunderstood me. I didn't say that you should go after the Anderson family. Lexy and Leona are innocent.

Trey: It's too late.

Me: Baby, so you shot Anderson?

Trey: Yes. Why not?

Me: Okay, is he dead?

Trey: How can I just kill him? I have to make him suffer.

Me: And Marla?

Trey: They'll all suffer. The Anderson family will pay.

Me: You'll go to jail, honey.

Trey: My brother will get me out.

Me: You can't always get what you want. You are going to go down, Leano.

Trey: I won't.

Me: You will.

Trey: Okay fine. If I go down, it's fine.

Me: And what about me? Don't you care about me?

Trey: Of course I do.

Me: So stop being selfish.

Trey: I am not being selfish, I am doing what's right.

Me: You are not.

Trey: I am going to get the file and go back to work.

Me: Baby, please listen to me.

...

He just walked away. God decided to give me a very stubborn husband, how unfair is that? I am going to have to come up with a plan but whaaaaat??

...

[Malebo]

I really don't know what happened to Bob. I know that Marla did not shoot Bob but I won't help her. I really want Bob to myself. It's not like I have anyone. My daughters want nothing to do with me. Bob is the only one who makes me happy plus I also have fake friends. They just want my money - The money that I worked hard for. I went to the hospital to see Bob and I bumped into my daughters but Mish was not with them. I smiled and spoke.

...

Me: Hey, my beautiful daughters.

Tso: Nolly, who's this lady?

Nolly: I have no idea.

Tso: Did she just call us her daughters?

Nolly: Maybe she lost her daughters and maybe we look like her daughters.

Me: Really? Are you girls being serious?

Tso: Sister Nolly, let's go. We are done here, right?

Nolly: Yes, my baby is perfectly fine.

Me: Wow, are you pregnant, honey?

Nolly: Who's your honey?

Me: Uhm...



Tso: Sister, you are going to be a great mother unlike some mothers we know.

Advertisement

26, 26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Nolly: You are soooo right.

Tso: So let's get out of here.

Nolly: Sure.

...

They walked away. Tears streamed down my face. I wiped them away and went to Bob's ward.

...

[Bonolo / Nolly]

Malebo is full of rubbish. Did she really think that we'd entertain her? Kitso and I walked out of the hospital. My phone started ringing. Aaron was calling so, I quickly went inside the car and answered.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Me: Hey, Aaron.

Aaron: He doesn't want to sign the divorce papers.

Me: Lungile?

Aaron: Yes.

Me: And Delano? Did he sign?

Aaron: Yes, he was also bragging about giving Kitso a deadly disease.

Me: He's a fool. Well, it's good that he doesn't know the truth.

Aaron: Yes, look... your husband wants to see you before signing the papers.

Me: I don't want to see him.

Aaron: If you want your divorce to be finalized then you'll come here.

Me: Where's "here"?

Aaron: I'll send you the address.

Me: Fine.

...

He hung up and sent the address. I told the driver where to take us. I also told Kitso everything. Lungile was really refusing to sign the papers. To my surprise, Kitso hugged him and spoke.

...

Tso: Hey big bro, how are you?

Lungi: I am fine and you?

Tso: I am good, where's that fool?

Lungi: Delano?

Tso: Yes.

Lungi: He left after signing the papers.

Tso: God heard my prayers.

Me: Lungile, why don't you want to sign the damn papers?

Lungi: Because I love you and you are my wife. I am willing to fight for you.

Me: You'll be wasting your time.

Lungi: I'll give you time. Sorry, I have to go now.

Me: Excuse me. You said that you'll sign the papers after seeing me.

Lungi: I lied.

Me: Lungile, please set me free. There's someone out there for me. You are not the one for me. You were never the one for me. You are a monster.

Tso: He's no longer a monster.

Me: Kitso, stay out of this.

Tso: I'm sorry, sister.

Lungi: Look Bonolo, I am really getting late. I have to get going.

Tso: Are you going to...

Lungi: Yes I am.

Tso: That's nice.

Me: What are you two talking about?

Lungi: Nothing.

Tso: Nothing.

...

Lungile then walked out. I was so shocked, like what nonsense is this?

...

[Five Months Later]

Kitso and Sifiso are madly in love with one another. Trey and Mish are also madly in love with one another even though they are forever fighting because of Trey's stubbornness. Mish got the DNA results a long time ago - Queen Mitchell is indeed Trey's mother and Aaron is indeed Trey's brother. Mish and Lexy hardly meet all because of Trey. Marla is still in jail. Anderson is still hospitalized, but getting better. Trey returned his mother's glass and defended his wife, Mish. Bonolo and

Lungile are back together and they are seeing a marriage counselor. Aaron found himself a girlfriend by the name Mpho but Lexy and Leona are not happy at all. Mpho is the same age as Bonolo. Malebo is still visiting Anderson at the hospital and she doesn't care about what people have to say. Delano and his family moved to Europe. The three sisters are finally happy but the question is, will their happiness last forever?

...

To be continued...

31

[Mitchell / Mish]

Trey and I are now staying in our house. Trey is still hurting but he doesn't want to go see a counselor. He's such a stubborn man. Today we didn't go to work so I found Trey preparing breakfast in the kitchen. The last time I checked, my man couldn't cook nor make breakfast so I was really shocked to see him in the kitchen. I greeted him and sat down. I then spoke.

...

Me: Tremaine, what are you doing?

Trey: Breakfast.

Me: But you can't co...

Trey: Shhh, just sit down, princess.

Me: I am sitting down, you know.

Trey: So keep quiet.

Me: Okay.

...

I did as I was told. Trey finally served breakfast. I looked at him and spoke.

...

Me: Look, baby. I am not hungry.

Trey: Are you not hungry or you don't want to eat the food I cooked specially for you?

Me: (Fake Smile) Okay, I'll eat.

Trey: I'll feed you.

Me: Sure.

...

Oh lord, do I really have to eat Trey's food? It's obviously bad, yes I know that it's smelling very nice but obviously it's very tasteless. I spoke.

...

Me: How about you eat first?

Trey: Do you think I'd kill you?

Me: Uhm... No, no, baby, it's not that.

Trey: Okay fine, I'll eat.

Me: Sure.

...

Trey ate first. He looked like someone who was enjoying the food. He smiled and fed me. I was shocked, like his food was really nice... but how? I spoke.

...

Me: How come?

Trey: How come what?

Me: Uhm... Look, your food is very delicious.

Trey: Really?

Me: Yes.

Trey: (Smiles) I guess I've passed the test.

Me: What test?

Trey: Mom has been teaching me how to cook.

Me: Wow, the queen?

Trey: Yes, babe.

Me: You are a fast learner. Now you can feed me all of the food you prepared.

Trey: That's my girl.

Me: You never seriously asked me to teach you how to cook, why?

Trey: I always wanted to surprise you and make you happy.

Me: Well, I am surprised and happy. Thank you, baby.

Trey: It's okay, my wife. Let's eat.



...

We ate and finished eating. I was so happy because Trey has been learning how to cook just for his wife. After eating we washed the dishes, but as always we didn't finish on time because we were playing. Lungile and Bonolo are staying together again. Aaron and Mpho are cohabiting just like Sifiso and Kitso. Everyone is just happy and love is beautiful. After washing the dishes, I asked Trey to drop me off at Bonolo's house, we were both going to the same neighborhood so there was no need for us to go in different cars. When I got to Nolly's house, Lungi was also home. Well, we are all okay, we decided to put the past behind us and move on. I greeted and sat down. Nolly spoke.

...

Nolly: (Smiles) I'm happy to see you, sister.

Me: (Smiles) Me too.

Nolly: How's your husband?

Me: He's fine, he just dropped me off at the gate.

Lungi: And why didn't he come inside to greet us?

Me: Well, he was in a hurry but he said that I should greet all of you for him.

Lungi: Where was he rushing to?

Me: I don't know.

...

Nolly offered me something to drink. She was looking chubby and beautiful. I spoke.

...

Me: Sister, how is it like to be pregnant?

Nolly: It's nice but also tiring.

Me: Well, you'll soon give birth.

Nolly: Yeah, and I am very happy.

Me: And are you happy, Lungi?

Lungi: (Smiles) Very happy.

...

My phone disturbed us by ringing. I answered.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Me: Hello?

Caller: Hello, am I speaking to Mrs Banks?

...

Oh yes, I've changed my surname. Trey is also using Banks surname. Nolly is just using Lungi's surname and Kitso is only using Moraka surname and I must say that she doesn't want that surname at all. I mean who would want Malebo's surname? Maybe very soon Kitso will use Marumo surname - Sifiso's surname that is. I spoke.

...

Me: Yes, it's Mrs Banks.

Caller: I just wanted to tell you that your husband just got arrested.

Me: Arrested?? Why??

Caller: Because he was pointing a gun at a person in public.

Me: Uhm... Which police station?

...

I realized that I was talking to a person from the police station, it's just that I didn't know whether it was detective or officer or station commander. I was so worried about Trey, I remember getting the name of the person who called but I forgot it. He told me about the police station. Trey and I were happy like an hour ago, now this???? Why, lord??? Why??? I spoke.

...

## Advertisement

26, 26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: Guys, I have to go.

Lungi: Who's arrested?

Me: Who else if not my foolish husband?

Nolly: Why?

...

I started telling Nolly and Lungi everything. I then called Aaron and told him everything. I need to bail my husband but I need Aaron. After some minutes, Aaron arrived at Lungi's house. We went to the police station but left Nolly and Lungi behind.

When we got to the police station, Aaron knew the man who arrested Trey so he begged him to let Trey go. I was fuming. We all headed back to Lungi's house and I was not talking to Trey.

Aaron shouted at Trey so much but I felt like it wasn't enough.

When we got to Lungi's house, I cried so much and took out the anger on Trey.

...

Trey: I am sorry.

Me: It's what you always say, just stay away from me.

Trey: I had to do it.

Me: Why? What did the person do to you?

Trey: She's Anderson's daughter.

Me: Who?

Trey: Lexy.

...

I give up. When will Trey stop all of this? This is all my fault, I had told him that he should make Anderson pay now he's making the whole family pay, even the innocent ones. Trey and I started shouting at one another.

...

Me: Tremaine, you are so stupid. You don't want to grow up. Why are you always in trouble?

Trey: Excuse me, don't call me stupid, I am still your husband, you know?

Me: Yes, my stupid husband. I am tired of you!!!!!!!

Trey: What are you trying to say?

Me: Stop what you are doing, it's wrong!!

Trey: Well, I won't stop!!!!

Me: I got married to a fool - a baby. I'll leave your damn ass for someone with brains

...

He got angrier and started punching the mirror. Aaron and Lungile tried stopping him but he went on and on. I got angry and spoke.

...

Me: If you don't stop what you are doing I am going to abort your baby!!

....

I was now in tears. Trey stopped what he was doing and looked at me. Everyone was so shocked and all eyes were on me. Nolly spoke.

...

Nolly: Are you pregnant? Like, honestly?

...

I nodded. Trey came closer to me. His hand was full of blood. His eyes were red and he was crying. I realized that I wasn't the problem, Trey is the way he is because he is still hurting, I really think he should get some help. He spoke softly.

...

Trey: I am sorry.

...

I swear this guy is always apologizing.

...

Me: It's fine. I am also sorry.

Trey: No, no... It's all my fault.

Me: No it's not. Everything is Anderson's fault but you have to let go of your anger.

Trey: (Shouts) Let go of my anger??? Will letting go of my anger bring back my father? The father I never knew??? Huh???

Answer me!!!

...

Oh, at least now I know why Trey is angry. I looked at Aaron just so he can help me with Trey. Aaron spoke.

...

Aaron: Look, Trey... Father loved you so much and, we understand that you are hurting but don't you think that you should get some help? We love you and we don't want you to end up in trouble. One of these days I might not be able to help you out when you need a lawyer. You've done so many wrong things and we might run out of luck if you continue doing bad. Please think about us, think about Mish and the unborn baby.

Trey: Uhm... Okay, I'll do this for my unborn baby and all of you.

Aaron: Thank you.

Me: You mean that you'll get some help?

Trey: Yes, baby. I will.

Me: Thank you so much.

Lungi: Let me get the first aid kit so that I can clean your hand.

Trey: Thank you so much, bro.

...

We all sat down. Lungile got the first aid kit and cleaned Trey's hand. We all went to our homes after some time leaving Lungile and Nolly behind.

...

[Lexy]

Mish's husband almost killed me today. Thankfully the cops passed by and saw everything. After all the madness that happened, me and my sister, Leona decided to go to the mall for shopping. We saw Aaron's girlfriend, Mpho at the parking lot. We went to her. She spoke.

...

Mpho: Oh, hi.

Me: Save your...



Mpho: No, no, honey. I am not greeting you. I don't have time for kids.

Me: Leona, Mpho just insulted me.

Leona: Lexy keep quiet. Look, Mpho... stay away from Aaron, he's my husband to be.

Mpho: (Laughs) So what's your husband to be doing with me?

Leona: You are going to regret everything. You don't know me.

Mpho: And I don't want to know you.

Leona: I will deal with you. I am capable of doing so many things. Now that my father will be discharged from the hospital by tomorrow, he'll help me get my man.

Mpho: (Laughs) You are such a baby. Please get away from me, I have a man waiting for me at home... Oops, and he happens to be your husband to be.

..,

Mpho got in the car and left. I spoke to Leona.

...

Me: I can't believe that you left her just like that after all the rubbish she said.

Leona: Don't worry, I'll get her. Dad is coming back tomorrow and he'll help me.

Me: And Trey does not know that we know everything now. We know that father wronged him now he's after all of us.

Leona: And he also does not know that father knows everything about the shooting. He doesn't know that we know that he's Aaron's brother. If I don't get Aaron then he should die.

Me: And everyone who's close to him.

Leona: You are are smart.

...

We laughed and went to our car. Revenge is sweet. Mom is in jail because of Trey. Father is hospitalized because of Trey. Aaron is with Mpho because of Trey. Trey shall pay. No... actually everyone is going to pay.

...

To be continued...

32

[Mpho]

When I got to Aaron's house, I told Aaron everything that happened at the parking lot. He kissed me and spoke.

...

Aaron: You worry too much, everything is fine.

Me: And how can you say that everything is fine? Not everything is fine. Marla wants you to marry Leona because your mother's sister owe her, that's not fair. Tell Marla that everything has got nothing to do with you.

Aaron: You don't get it... If I don't pay Marla then the reputation of my family will be ruined. I am from a royal family so I have to always make sure that everyone at the palace is happy.

Me: Then pay Marla.

Aaron: Yes, I am working on that. I told you that the bank does not want to give me the money without Mish's permission and signature.

Me: Fine, then. Well, one of these days I am going to beat her up.

Aaron: Mish?

Me: No, not Mish.

Aaron: Who?

Me: Leona.

Aaron: No baby, please don't fight. You are a Prince's girlfriend, what will people say?

Me: I don't care about people.

Aaron: Well, I care. I won't allow you tarnish my name because of Leona.

Me: You are such a bore. To you everything is about royalty. That's what you should marry and make love to - Your damn royalty.

...

I began walking away. He called my name but I just walked away and slammed the bedroom door. Aaron is full of rubbish, he only cares about himself and royalty.

...

[Tremaine / Trey]

Today my wife gave me the best news ever. I am going to be a father. I am soooo happy. Mish was preparing dinner for us so I went to her. I spoke.

...

Me: Baby, can I help?

Mish: No, I'll be fine.

Me: Please?

Mish: No Trey, you only have one hand, remember?

Me: My hand is now okay.

Mish: Yeah right.

Me: Okay, can I sit down and just look at you?

Mish: You are already looking at me.

Me: Stare?

Mish: No.

Me: Are you mad at me?

Mish: No.

...

My phone rang. It was Aaron. He started telling me that Anderson is leaving the hospital tomorrow. He also told me that he just heard from Sifiso that Marla just got released from jail. I know that I promised everyone that I will stop creating trouble but at least I have to be on the look out and I should always be one step ahead of the Anderson family. They are obviously going to come after me and my loved ones. After talking to

Aaron on the phone, I went closer to Mish and told her everything that Aaron told me. She then spoke.

...

Mish: Please don't do anything stupid.

Me: I won't, I promise.

Mish: Good.

...

I held her tummy and spoke to my unborn baby.

...

Me: Daddy loves you so much. I will take care of you and I will always take care of your mother. I can't wait to see you, baby. I am so...

Mish: Trey, please take care of my pots. I need to use the bathroom quickly.

Me: But I am still talking to my unborn baby.

Mish: Trey, I will be right back, please.

Me: Okay.

...

Mish left the kitchen and I took care of her pots.

...

[Mitchell / Mish]

I've told such a big lie just so I can change Trey. I had to make him stop all the bad things he was doing but now he's attached to this fake baby. I feel so bad. Trey will never forgive me for telling this big lie but what could I have done? My man was going crazy because of the Anderson family so I did what I did to help him. I was just sitting in the bathroom and crying. As I was crying, Trey walked in. He sat down next to me and spoke.

...

Trey: Look baby, I understand that you are not used to all of these changes but please don't cry. You'll be fine. We'll be fine and we are going to be great parents.

Me: Uhm... I...I... You think so?

Trey: Yes, babe.

Me: Thank you.

Trey: Now stop crying, please.

Me: (Smiles) Okay.

...

He wiped away my tears and kissed my forehead. He then got up and helped me get up. I spoke.

...

Me: Thank you so much, Trey.

Trey: No, don't mention it. Let's go back to the kitchen before your food starts burning.

Me: Sure.

...

We went back to the kitchen. Lord, please forgive me for telling such a big lie.

...

[Marla]

I got released from jail and my daughters told me everything about that Tremaine boy. They also told me that Aaron is dating someone else. He betrayed my daughter. We lost everything in USA all because of Trey's wife, Mish. Now we are staying with our daughters in SA, like all of us are in SA. Mish took our house, our companies and our money. What's better than revenge now? I mean we lost EVERYTHING. I spoke to Sam, my eldest daughter.

...

Me: Samantha, tomorrow we have to go see that stupid Mitchell.



Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Sam: Which Mitchell?  
Mitchell the Queen or Mitchell the Princess?

Me: Mitchell the queen.

Sam: For what?

Me: Don't worry.

Sam: Okay mom but dad is coming home tomorrow.

Me: And where's Malebo?

Sam: I don't know, why?

Me: I have to get rid of her but not now.

Sam: So when?

Me: After dealing with everyone else.

Sam: Okay, mom.

Leona: Can you please deal with Mpho first?

Me: No baby, I am leaving that one to you. Do whatever you  
want to do with her, I really don't care.

Leona: But I am going to need some help.

Me: Lexy will help you.

Lexy: Yes, I will. I'll still pretend to be Mish's friend.

Sam: That's a great plan.

Me: Wait... Where's your other sister?

Lexy: She went out with her new boyfriend.

Me: Okay look, call Mitchell the Princess and tell her that you want to see her tomorrow.

Lexy: Okay mom.

Leona: And put her on loudspeaker.

Lexy: Cool.

...

Lexy called Mitchell and Mitchell answered.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Mish: Hi.

Lexy: Hey, babe.

Mish: Mhmm?

Lexy: Why do you sound like you don't want to talk to me?

Mish: You and I haven't been talking to one another for so many months so why would you call me now?

Lexy: To apologize. I really miss you.

Mish: Really?

Lexy: Yes.

Mish: That's nice.

Lexy: Can we please meet tomorrow? I want to make things right.

Mish: No Lexy, my husband was at fault. You did nothing wrong.

Lexy: You think so?

Mish: Yes.

Lexy: So does that mean you've forgiven me?

Mish: I was never mad at you. And I am sorry for everything.

Lexy: It's fine, babe. I am okay.

Mish: Thank you.

Lexy: So can I see you tomorrow, please?

Mish: Sure babe, but where?

...

Lexy looked at me and I whispered "Here" as in like at our place. She then spoke to Mish.

...

Lexy: My place.

Mish: And where's everyone?

Lexy: USA.

Mish: Why?

Lexy: To get all of our things from the house and companies you took away from them.

Mish: Look Lexy, I am sorry but you know that I had to do what I did. None of the things you mentioned belongs to your family. They never belonged to them but the Banks.

Lexy: Of course, babe. I know and I understand everything.

Mish: You do?

Lexy: Yes.

Mish: Thanks, you are the best.

Lexy: Let me hang up now. I'll see you tomorrow.

Mish: Will Leona be around?

Lexy: No, she won't.

Mish: Okay, see you tomorrow after work.

Lexy: Okay baby, bye.

Mish: Bye, honey.

...

Lexy hung up. I gave her a high five and spoke.

...

Me: Mhmm, My daughter, you are brilliant.

Lexy: (Laughs) Thanks mom, so what's your plan?

Me: To kidnap the bitch and torture her. She'll come here only to walk into a lion's den.

Leona: Mom, you are smart.

Me: (Smiles) Of course I am.

Sam: I can't wait for tomorrow. Mish is very stupid.

Lexy: You can say that again.

...

We started laughing. It's payback time!!!

...

To be continued...

33

[Mitchell / Mish]

Does Lexy think that I am stupid? Why would she forgive me for what I did? Well, I didn't do anything wrong. I just took what rightfully belongs to the Banks family. Now Lexy thinks that I am a fool. She doesn't know that she's the fool here. I had put her on loudspeaker so Trey also heard everything. Trey spoke.

...

Trey: I'm glad that you are done with that girl. I really never liked her.

Me: I may be stubborn but at least at the end, I do listen to my handsome husband.

Trey: (Smiles) That's good so tomorrow what are you going to do?

Me: I'll come up with an excuse.

Trey: Good, can you please do something for me?

Me: Sure.

Trey: Please let her believe that the two of you are really good but always come up with an excuse when it comes to the two of you meeting.

Me: Done.

Trey: You must only meet her in public but I am going to get you bodyguards, is that okay?

Me: Yes honey, it's okay.

Trey: I am telling you, The Anderson family will never give us a break so we shouldn't turn a blind eye.

Me: You are right, baby but don't attack them in public. I don't want you to end up in jail.

Trey: Okay, Mishy.

...

He looked deeply into my eyes. All of a sudden we were kissing and half naked. We made love in the kitchen. Trey really drives me crazy. He's that one man that I'd do anything for. He's the man that I'd take a bullet for. He's the man that my heart chose. He's the man that I will forever love. He's the man that makes me happy. He doesn't have to do anything for me, his love and happiness is just enough for me. I would kill for my husband and that's nothing but the truth.

...

[The Next Day]

[The Queen]

I don't know why but Leona and Marla came to the palace to see me. I spoke.

...

Me: How may I help you?

Leona: Heyy woman, where's my husband?

Me: Does your husband live in my house?

Marla: You know that we are talking about Aaron.

Me: Can you hear how your daughter is talking to me? Teach her some manners, Marla.

Leona: I swear if it wasn't for Aaron, I was going to beat you up right now, old woman.

...

"ENOUGH, DON'T YOU DARE TALK TO MY MOTHER LIKE THAT, DON'T YOU HAVE SOME MANNERS?" said Mish, standing at the door. She came inside and gave Leona a hot slap. I couldn't help but chuckle. I really didn't expect Mish to do what she did.

Leona stood up from the couch and spoke to Mish.

...

Leona: Did you just slap me?

Mish: And did you just insult my mother?



Marla: Small Mitchell, stay away from my daughter or else...

Mish: Or else what?

Marla: Or else I'll beat you up.

Mish: You wouldn't dare. And aren't you all supposed to be in the US?

Marla: We just came back.

...

Mish started laughing. She then spoke.

...

Mish: Do you see this briefcase?

Leona: Of course we see it, we are not blind.

Mish: Well, sit your ass down, idiot.

Leona: Are you calling me an idiot?

Mish: Would I call myself an idiot? Just sit down or else you won't get married to Aaron.

...

Leona sat down. Mish gave the briefcase to Marla and spoke.

...

Mish: Your money is inside. Take it and leave Aaron alone. Aaron will not get married to a person who can't respect his mother. Open the damn briefcase, I just got the money from the bank. Count it... well, that's if you can count.

Leona: Don't speak to my mother like that. Aaron will get married to me.

Mish: Over my dead body.

Leona: I'll indeed kill you.

Mish: You must try harder. Now get up and leave.

Marla: Leona, let's go.

Leona: But mother...

Marla: Now!!!

...

Leona was in tears. She got up and left with her mother. Mish looked at me and spoke.

...

Mish: I am sorry, mom. I didn't mean to make noise in your palace.

Me: It's okay. Thank you for standing up for me.

Mish: It is really nothing. You are my mother in-law so I take you as my biological mother. Not everyone is lucky like me. Not everyone gets a mother in-law like you. Marla always treated me badly so thank you very much for showing me that not all mother in-laws are the same.

Me: (Smiles) It's okay honey. And just know that Marla always treated you bad because she knew that she wasn't my son's real mother.

Mish: Yes, you are right mom, but you might treat me like Marla after hearing what I have to say to you.

Me: Come sit down next to me and tell me what's wrong. I can never hate you, it's impossible.

...

She sat down next to me. She started crying. I comforted her and spoke.

...

Me: What's going on? What happened?

Mish: I lied to everyone. I lied to my husband.

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: About what?

Mish: My pregnancy. I told everyone that I am pregnant and now Trey is sooo inlove with the fake baby.

Me: But why did you tell such a big lie, honey?

Mish: Because Trey was losing it. This is what happened...

...

Mish started telling me everything that has been happening with Trey. I didn't know that my son was missing his father. I didn't know that my son was suffering. Well, I think that Mish did the right thing. I know that my son is going to get hurt once the truth is out but I don't blame Mish. I spoke to Mish.

...

Me: It's okay. Yes, I know that my son will be very hurt and angry but right now I think that you did the right thing. I can't lose him again so I think it's best that you lied to him.

Mish: Mother, I feel so bad. You haven't seen how happy Trey is. Whenever he gets the time, he plays with my tummy or speaks to the fake baby. It breaks my heart.

Me: I understand but everything will be fine.

Mish: Thanks, mom.

...

I wiped off her tears. I really think that Mish is the best daughter in-law. She's like a daughter I never had.

...

[Leona]

I was soooo mad at my mom. She just took the money and told me that we should leave. She knows how I feel about Aaron but she still made me angry. In the car, I spoke.

...

Me: Mom, you didn't do the right thing.

Marla: We have the money, what more do you want?

Me: Aaron.

Marla: Well, you won't get him, its obvious. You should be worried about our plan not Aaron. Mish saw me, dammit... so obviously she won't go to the house to see Lexy.

Me: You are the one who messed up everything.

Marla: How?

Me: Aren't you the one who said that we should go to the palace to see the queen? You messed up.

Marla: I know but we'll come up with another plan.

Me: Wasn't that stupid Mish supposed to be at work?

Marla: She obviously lied to Lexy.

Me: Or she decided to go see the queen before going to work.

Marla: Possible.

Me: So I lost Aaron just like that?

Marla: Yes. And just forget about him. It's not like he loves you.

Me: You are being unfair right now.

Marla: Let's go get your father at the hospital, he'll know what to do.

Me: Fine.

...

Mom drove off to the hospital. When we got to the hospital, father was not there. We talked to the doctor who was taking care of him.

...

Marla: If my husband is not here then where's he?

Doc: He was discharged like two hours ago.

Me: Heyyy Mr, where is my father? Where the hell did he go to?

Doc: Excuse me, young lady, you will not talk to me like that. Your father left and it's not my job to know where he is. My job

was to take care of him and I did exactly that. Now if you'll excuse me, I have better things to do.

Me: Go, fool.

...

The doctor just left. Mom spoke to me.

...

Marla: You are so rude. How are we going to know where Bob is?

Me: It's not like that stupid doctor knows.

Marla: Maybe he went back home.

Me: What if Malebo left with him?

Marla: I don't know about that one. Please call your father.

Me: Sure.

...

I phoned my father and couldn't reach him. I think his phone is off. I told mom everything. We walked out of the hospital. At the parking lot, some weird girl bumped into me real hard. She smiled at me and spoke.

...

Her: I am sorry, did you get hurt?

Me: Idiot, get away from me.

Her: But I am really sorry.

Me: Get away from me, slag.

...

She smiled again and she had black teeth. Mom spoke to me.

...

Marla: Hey, your forearm is bleeding.

Me: Black teeth, what did you do to me?

Her: Nothing. I am sorry.

Me: Middle class idiot, go away.

...

She laughed and just walked away. What an ugly person. Now my forearm was extremely painful but I still told mom that we should go home. I lost so much blood and nobody stabbed me. It was really weird. Is that girl a witch or what? I spoke to mom.

...

Me: Mom, it hurts. It really hurts.

Marla: Let me see.

...



I showed her my forearm. It was super grey. I was now crying. What did that girl do to me and why? The next thing mom drove into a truck. I don't know what happened after that.

...

To be continued...

34

[Lexy]

I got a call from the cops and I was told that Leona and mom had a car accident and were rushed to the hospital. I was really shocked. How did everything happen so quickly? I was with my sister, Cee - Well, we call her Cee. I told her everything and she spoke.

...

Cee: Do I look like I care?

Me: What? How can you say that?

Cee: Just leave me alone. I am going to meet with my boyfriend.

Me: That's what you lately do. Tell me, when did you change like this? I mean you and Samantha are the ones who always troubled Mish and Trey so why are you like this now?

Cee: You don't get it, do you?

Me: What is it that I don't get?

Cee: I've always done things because my parents wanted me to do them. I never did something because I wanted to do it. Our parents are using us, can't you see it? Tell me... You've been living in SA with Leona, there was no me, there was no Sam,

there was no mom or even dad, were you not enjoying your life?

Me: I was.

Cee: Well, now everyone will use you, especially Sam. She's very cunning. She once got my boyfriend in the US to rape Mish but fortunately I stopped my stupid boyfriend before he could even get to Mish. Sam is very evil and she uses people. And what about Leona? She's very disrespectful, and she's forever talking a whole lot of rubbish. Goodluck. I am done with all of you.

Me: Cee, you can't do that.

Cee: I can, Boo. I have a new boyfriend and he really makes me happy. Oh, and I really don't have anything against Mish and Trey. I was just used by my parents but not anymore, BooBoo. I refuse to do all the dirty work for this dysfunctional family.

Me: Wow.

Cee: Wake up before it's too late. I have been there so I know what I'm talking about. Bye.

...

She left. I was really confused. She is now different and has got a big mouth. I phoned Sam and told her about Leona and mom, we then agreed to meet up at the hospital.

...

[Mpho]

Marla - Tick. Leona - Tick. Now who's next? SAMANTHA!!!  
Gosh, what a beautiful day. I am not talking to my man all because of the Anderson family so I'll teach all of them a lesson and they won't see me coming. I was in the kitchen when Kitso walked in. Well, I have been planning everything with her. We'll both take the Anderson family down. She gave me a hug and sat down. She wasn't looking good at all so I sat down with her and spoke.

...

Me: What's wrong, babe?

Tso: Sifiso.

Me: What did he do?

Tso: He's talking about marriage.

Me: Does he want to marry you?

Tso: Yes.. No... Well, I don't know but he's lately talking about marriage.

Me: So? Don't you want to get married?

Tso: How can I still want to get married after what Delano did to me? I am scared, Mpho.

Me: I understand what you are saying.

Tso: Do you?

Me: Yes, but you know that Sifiso loves you so much.

Tso: Yes I know but I really don't see myself getting married again.

Me: Do you want to lose him?

Tso: No.

Me: Then don't push him away. Talk to him about how you feel.

Tso: Okay, I will.

Me: Good, so cheer up.

Tso: (Smiles) Yeah, I should hey. I mean, we should be celebrating.

Me: You are right.

...

Aaron walked in and spoke.

...

Aaron: Celebrating what?

Tso: So you don't know? We...

Me: Aaron, it's not your business.

Aaron: For how long are you going to be mad at me?

Me: Just leave us, we are busy.

Tso: Aren't you supposed to be at work?

Aaron: Does it matter? My wife is mad at me.

Me: I am not your wife, we are not married.

Aaron: Look Mpho, if you are going to keep on acting for me then you might as well leave my house. Why are you staying in my house if you can't forgive me for small things? For how many times should I say that I am sorry?

Me: Aaron, are you chasing me out of your house?

Aaron: Those are your words.

Me: Fine, I'll go.

Aaron: And don't ever come back.

Tso: Aaron, how can you say that?

Aaron: Kitso, stay out of this. No woman can understand me better than Mish. I am out of here. Mpho, if you leave my house, never come back again. And I mean it, you are just too dramatic.

...

He walked out of the house. Tso spoke.

...

Tso: You are pushing him away, you get angry at him for small things.

Me: So did he really have to hurt me like that?

Tso: He's also hurting. So tell me, are you going to leave his house?

Me: No, I just wanted him to beg me.

Tso: That's wrong, Mpho.

Me: Yeah, I'll apologize when he comes back.

Tso: You better do that or else you'll lose him.

Me: Yeah, babe. So tell me, what did you use to make that girl's arm bleed and where the hell is Bob Anderson? I mean he's not at the hospital.

Tso: He's with Malebo. They stay together like husband and wife, it's disgusting.

Me: Your mom is heartless. How can she stay with a man who never treated Mish right?

Tso: Malebo is a mistake of a woman, I tell you. No wonder father left her.

Me: (Laughs) Let's have some wine.

Tso: Now you are talking. We must get ready for Sam.

...

We had some great wine and planned our next move.

...

[Samantha]

Lexy finally arrived at the hospital. She told me everything that Cee said. I'll sort Cee out but right now I have to see mom and Leona. We first went to mom's ward. She was conscious. We sat down. She was crying, I wiped off her tears and spoke.

...

Me: Mom, don't cry. You are fine now.

Marla: Everything happened so fast. I got disturbed by Leona. Something is wrong with her. Her arm is grey, it's really scary.

Lexy: What made her arm grey?

Marla: Let me rest. I'll tell you when I wake up.

Me: Okay

Advertisement

mom. Don't worry, you'll be fine.

Marla: Where's your father?



Lexy: We don't know. Isn't he in the same hospital?

Marla: He left early in the morning.

Me: But he never came home.

Lexy: He's probably with Malebo.

Me: You are right.

Lexy: Mom, just give me a gun, I'll shoot Mish today so that Malebo can get hurt. I mean she took your man - My father.

Marla: I don't want you to end up in jail.

Lexy: I'll be careful. I am meeting with Mish today, remember?

Marla: I don't think Mish will still meet with you. She saw us at the palace.

Lexy: Damn mom, what have you done?

Marla: I am sorry.

Lexy: So what's our next plan?

Marla: I don't know.

Me: I have a better plan.

Lexy: Tell us about it, Sam.

Me: No, not now.

Marla: Please be careful.

Me: I will mom. I have to go now.

Lexy: Where are you going?

Me: Leona's ward then after that I'll go somewhere. I know exactly who can help us.

Lexy: Who are you talking about?

Me: Relax baby sis, relax.

...

I got up and went to Leona's ward. Lexy followed me. Leona was in a very bad condition. She was literally losing her arm. After seeing Leona I left. Lexy went back to mom. I called Danny, a real gangster. What Trey used to do is nothing compared to what Danny can do plus Danny is my father's age. He also do things better than father. I went to his mansion. The security guy opened for me. I went in and found Danny sipping on some expensive, great whiskey. I sat down and greeted him. He spoke.

...

Danny: What can I do for you, Sam?

Me: Here are the photos of the people I want you to get rid of.

...

I handed him the photos. He looked at them and spoke.

...

Danny: Names?

Me: All the names are at the back of the photos. Each photo has a name at the back.

Danny: Oka, and why should I get rid of them?

Me: Because I hate them.

Danny: What did they do to you?

Me: They took everything away from my family. I really hate them.

Danny: I see.

Me: You can even help yourself with the females, I don't care.

Danny: I don't understand.

Me: I mean you can sleep with all the females, I don't really care.

Danny: Why would I want to sleep with these beautiful women?

Me: To hurt them, of course. Rape them.

Danny: I don't go around forcing myself on women. Never insult me like that again.

Me: Are you gay?

Danny: No.

Me: So are you trying to say that you don't find me attractive?

Danny: Listen, Samantha. You are beautiful but I am not interested. I don't do kids, you know.

Me: Whatever, Danny. Anyway, I have to go.

Danny: Go well.

Me: I'll call you tomorrow.

Danny: For what?

Me: To remind you.

Danny: Don't or else I won't help you. We are not friends so don't even try to remind me.

Me: Okay, Danny.

...

I got up and left. I couldn't give Danny Malebo's photo because I don't have it. Well, I want mom to be the one to get rid of Malebo so I shouldn't trouble Danny a lot. The Anderson family will always win. It's nothing but the truth.

...

[Mitchell / Danny]

I heard about a man by the name Danny. He's a man who can do anything. He's a man who can do the impossible. He's very dangerous so I think I should become his friend so that he can help me get rid of The Anderson family. I got his contact number from a guy who used to work for Trey. I called him and told him that I'd like to see him. I never went to work today, I spent the whole day at the palace. Danny gave me his address and I drove to his house. His house is damn beautiful. It's a mansion, I tell you. He let me in and I found him watching TV and smoking one of the most expensive cigarettes - Treasurer Black. I greeted and sat down. He looked at me and gasped. It was like he saw a ghost or something. I was really lost. I spoke.

...

Me: Are you okay, sir?

Danny: Oh, Nooo, Mish. Is this really you?

Me: Do you know me? Have we met before?

Danny: Photos.

Me: Excuse me?

Danny: Oh, no. What can I do for you?

Me: Here are the photos of the people I want you to get rid of. The names are at the back of the photos.

...

I handed him the photos. He was still acting strange. He spoke.

...

Danny: But why me?

Me: Because you are the man for this job.

Danny: But why's everyone asking me to do the same thing? It's not fair.

Me: Did someone ask you to get rid of someone today?

Danny: Uhm... I... Just let it go.

Me: Look, money is not a problem.

Danny: Let me get back to you by tomorrow.

Me: Okay, sir. Thank you.

Danny: It's fine.

Me: I have to go now.

Danny: Before you go, can I ask you something?

Me: Yes?

Danny: Why do you want to get rid of these people?

Me: Because I hate them. They troubled us for so many years and they are still troubling us. They killed my husband's father and had my husband as their son. They turned my husband into

a monster but what happened when he needed a bone marrow? They didn't give a shit about him. I really hate them.

Danny: Okay then. I'll call you tomorrow.

Me: Sure. I'll go now.

Danny: Okay, bye.

...

I left. If the Anderson family thinks that they'll win, then they should forget. I won't let them win. They always won but this time I won't let them win.

...

To be continued...

35

[Danny]

After Mish left, I looked at all the photos I got from Mish and Sam. A friend of mine came in. He sat down and spoke.

...

Steve: Who are they?

Me: Hello to you too.

Steve: Oh sorry, I didn't know that I must always greet. Look, I was with you in the morning.

Me: Mitchell, Kitso and Bonolo.

Steve: Your daughters?

Me: Yes.

Steve: What about them?

Me: When I left that mistake of a woman, my daughters were very young but I still remember how they look like and I still have their photos with me. Yes, they look very young on the photos that I have but I think that these three ladies are my daughters.

...



I said that handing the photos to Steve. I then got up, went to my study and got the photos of my daughters who happens to share names with the three ladies I was asked to kill. I gave the photos to Steve and sat down. Steve spoke.

...

Steve: Who's a mistake of a woman?

Me: Malebo.

Steve: Oh, wow. I also think that these are your daughters.

Me: I can't believe that Sam wants me to kill my daughters. Look, I need a favor from you.

Steve: What favor?

Me: Tomorrow I'll call Mish to come here. I want you to bump into her, you must wear this ring. It has got a needle. Need I tell you more?

Steve: No, I get everything. You want Mish's blood and I should use that ring to get the blood.

Me: You are smart.

Steve: Give the ring then.

...

I gave the ring to Steve and spoke.

...

Me: I must always make sure that Bonolo or Kitso don't get to see me. They obviously still remember my face.

Steve: Why don't you want them to see you?

Me: What am I going to tell them? That I left them because I was financially embarrassed and couldn't support them or their mother?

Steve: You were not that broke.

Me: But Malebo always saw me as a broke and weak man.

Steve: And you are not that man anymore.

Me: Yes, you are right. I am damn wealthy right now and I can do anything I want at any time. I RULE!!!

Steve: Then you should reunite with your daughters.

Me: Not now my dear friend, not now.

Steve: Mish doesn't know you so get close to her. Get to know her better.

Me: Yes, you are right. I actually didn't think of that.

Steve: So who are you going to kill?

Me: The ones who troubled my daughters.

Steve: Yes, Samantha must fall. Plus I never really liked her. She's so arrogant.

Me: I will deal with everyone who troubled my daughters, that's a promise. Mish is married, you know and I didn't get the chance to attend her wedding all thanks to Malebo.

Steve: Everything will be fine. They might all be married.

Me: Yes, everything will be fine. I, Daniel Molefe will make everything fine.

...

[Bonolo / Nolly]

My life is really interesting. I never thought that I'd live to see the day whereby my husband and I live in peace. I am pregnant and happy. My husband is a better man now and he also makes me happy. The only people who are troubling us (me and my loved ones) is the Anderson family. My loved ones told me to stay far away from the Anderson family and just take care of myself and my unborn child.

...

[Tremaine / Trey]

Today I started attending counseling classes. Well, it's private classes so I really feel comfortable talking/opening up to that lady. Thank God, she's not beautiful. I don't like to be around

beautiful ladies, some are very tempting. At least I've got my beautiful wife at home. When I arrived at home, I found Mish cooking. She looked so happy. I kissed her and then kissed her tummy. She spoke.

...

Mish: Hey, handsome.

Me: Hey, beautiful.

Mish: How was your day?

Me: It was really nice and yours?

Mish: It was also nice. Please go take a shower, dinner will be ready in 30 minutes.

Me: I'll take a shower after eating.

Mish: Are you that hungry?

Me: Yes, I am.

Mish: Sorry my baby, sit down then.

Me: Who did you see today? You are so happy.

Mish: I saw a man that made me very happy. I really felt happy after talking to him. It was like I've known him for years.

Me: A man? Who is he?

Mish: D... Uhm... Just a stranger I met.

Me: Are you sure?

Mish: Yes, I am. Anyway, how was your first session?

Me: It was really okay. I opened up.

Mish: Already? Did you cry?

Me: (Laughs) No, why would you ask me that?

Mish: I am your wife. I just want to know.

Me: I didn't cry.

Mish: (Giggles) Okay then, I believe you.

...

Mish just kept on teasing me so we ended up just fooling around in the house. This wife of mine never gives me a break but I really love her. We stopped fooling around and she finally dished up for us. We ate. After eating, we washed the dishes and spoke.

...

Mish: My prince?

Me: My princess?

Mish: I love you so much.

Me: I love you too.

Mish: Today I paid Marla all her money.

Me: Yeah, mom told me.

Mish: (Smiles) I like it when you call her mom, it's really cute.

Me: (Smiles) I know.

Mish: Come here.

Me: Of course.

...

We shared a very passionate kiss. Things got a lil bit out of hand so I carried Mish to the bedroom. Well my wife ain't "lazy", she always know how to make me happy. She was really good, she was actually beyond the word good. She really did me good... It was fun and nice.

...

[Anderson]

My marriage is collapsing. Marla still loves me but the truth is I don't love her anymore. I am really in love with Malebo. She cleared all the hospital bills. She is always there for me. I love her. When I got discharged from the hospital, I came to Malebo's house. Well, before I even went to the hospital, I was staying with Malebo. We were watching TV when my phone rang. It was Leona calling.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Me: Hi.

Leona: Hi?

Me: What do you want me to say? Leona, what do you want?

Leona: Daddy, where are you?

Me: How is it your business?

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Leona: I am your daughter.

Me: Bye, Leona.

Leona: Aren't you going to help us take down those idiots?

Me: Which idiots?

Leona: Trey, Mitchell, Mitchell, Kitso, Bonolo, Aar...

Me: Just shut up.

Leona: Are you telling me to shut up?

Me: Yes.

Leona: No... You shut up, what kind of a fool are you? Do you know that I am hospitalized?

Me: For what?

Leona: I was in an accident. I just woke up now and thought of calling you.

Me: Thanks for the call, bye.

Leona: Dad, what's wrong with you?

Me: Nothing.

Leona: Then go home.

Me: For what?

Leona: My sisters. Mom is also hospitalized.

Me: Okay

Leona: Okay?

Me: What should I do or say?

Leona: Act like a husband and a father.

Me: I am nobody's father or husband.

Leona: (Shouts) You are such a moron. You are not a man, you idiot. I hate you, you are not a man.

Me: Watch your tongue, you should respect me.

Leona: For what?



Me: Sorry, I forgot that you know nothing about respect, you are a daughter of a mistake of a woman so how can you respect your elders? I really don't blame you... Like Mother Like Daughter.

Leona: Are you calling my mother a mistake of a woman?

Me: Yes, I am.

Leona: To hell with you. F\*\*\* you, Bob.

...

I hung up. I was really fuming. This Leona chick does not have manners. I told Malebo everything that Leona said to me. She kissed my cheek and spoke.

...

Malebo: Don't worry, I am here with you.

Me: (Shouts) Leona insulted me and you are telling me that you are here with me? What exactly can you do?

Malebo: Bob, why are you shouting at me now? You couldn't shout at your daughter but you are shouting at me. I am not your child, you know.

Me: I am sorry, honey. I am sorry.

Malebo: It's fine.

Me: I love you, please forgive me.

Malebo: I said it's fine, Bobby.

Me: Thank you, honey.

Malebo: Can I ask?

Me: Yes?

Malebo: Are you ever going to tell my daughters that I always knew the truth?

Me: No, why?

Malebo: I am really worried. Already, my daughters hate me so if you tell them that I knew about Trey's father, The royal family and many more, they are going to hate me even more.

Me: Why are you talking like that? I won't tell them anything.

Malebo: And what about our son? Are you ever going to tell my daughters that you and I got a son together? A son who is 25 years old now? Are you ever going to tell them that you and I come a long way? Are you ever going to tell them that their father left because of me?

Me: Heyyy, babe, what's wrong now? Why so many questions?

Malebo: I am just a bad mother. I am a bad woman.

Me: No, you are not. You did everything you did because of the love you have for me.

Malebo: Do you love me?

Me: Of course I do.

Malebo: So why are you still married to Marla? Divorce her.

Me: I've also been thinking about that. I'll do it.

Malebo: Really?

Me: Yes.

Malebo: Promise?

Me: Yes, I promise.

Malebo: Thank you.

Me: Will you always be by my side and support me?

Malebo: I will.

Me: Promise?

Malebo: I've already done a lot for you. My daughters does not want me because of you so obviously I am already by your side.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you for everything.

Malebo: It's a pleasure.

Me: Let's forget about everyone and just focus on our son.

Malebo: I can do that but you must first forget about your family. You must divorce Marla then I'll gladly forget about my daughters.

Me: Promise?

Malebo: Promise.

Me: (Smiles) Consider it done.

Malebo: I love you.

Me: And I love you more, honey.

...

[Mitchell / Mish]

It's the next day. Danny wants to see me this very morning, I can go to work anytime I want. I went to Danny's house, just before I could sit down, some man came running and bumped into me, he really hurt me. I was now bleeding, it was like he injected me with a very thin injection. Danny told him to get the first aid kit, I heard Danny calling him Steve. I sat down, Danny then sat down next to me and spoke.

...

Danny: Let me clean you up.

Me: No Danny, it's okay.

Danny: I insist.

Me: Fine.

...

I just had a small opening but there was too much of blood. Danny cleaned me up, what surprised me is that he wasn't wearing gloves, he just touched my blood like he knows me. I looked at him and spoke.

...

Me: What if I am sick? Why are you just touching my blood like that?

Danny: Uhm... I... I trust you. And I don't have any cuts or wounds so I should be fine even if you are sick.

Me: You trust me? But why?

Danny: Trust at first sight.

Me: (Laughs) I've never heard of something like that. Well, thank you.

Danny: It's okay. This is my friend, Steve, and Steve, this is my da... Arg sorry, I mean this is Mish.

Me: Hello, sir.

Steve: Hey, dear.

...

I looked at Danny and found him staring at me and smiling. This man is really weird. He scares me but I still feel comfortable

around him... I don't know if I am making sense or not but it's the truth. I enjoy being around Danny.

...

To be continued...

36

[Danny]

Mitchell is such a beautiful, young woman. I enjoy spending time with her. Steve went to the hospital so I was just with Mitchell. I made sure that I make her spend the day with me. I spoke to Mitchell.

...

Me: Mish, do you have sisters or brothers?

Mish: I have two sisters.

Me: Who are they? I mean what's their names?

Mish: Why are you asking?

Me: You want me to get rid of some people, right? I should know your loved ones so that I can get to protect them.

Mish: Yeah, you are right. My husband's name is Trey/Leano. My brother in-law is Sifiso, Aaron... Arg Danny, I've got so many loved ones. Just know that the Banks family is my family - My in-laws. Everyone knows Queen Mitchell.

Me: Oh, is she your mother in-law?

Mish: Yes, Aaron is Queen Mitchell's son so he's my brother in-law. And then there's also the apple of my eye - Trey/Leano... He's the youngest son of the queen and he's my husband. Bob

Anderson killed Mr Banks and turned my husband into a monster but I am happy that my husband is a better man now.

Me: You didn't say anything about your own mother... Where's she?

Mish: She's dead.

Me: Whaaat??? How??? When???

Mish: (Laughs) Well, she's still alive but dead to us.

Me: Us?

Mish: Kitso, Bonolo and I.

Me: And who's Kitso and Bonolo?

Mish: My sisters.

Me: Oh, so do you hate your mother?

Mish: Hate is an understatement.

Me: (Smiles) Wow, music to my ears.

Mish: Excuse me?

Me: Uhh... I... It's nothing.

Mish: You are weird.

Me: I know.



Mish: Heyyy Danny, do you know that everyone is scared of you? But I am not. I feel safe with you, maybe it's because you are not rude like they said you are.

Me: I can't be rude to you. You are so innocent.

Mish: (Smiles) Thank you.

Me: And your father? Where's he?

Mish: Uhm... I don't have a father.

Me: Did he pass on?

Mish: No, he left the day I was born. Please let's not talk about my father, I blame my mom for everything.

Me: I know that you don't want to talk about it but can I ask why you blame your mother?

Mish: My sister, Bonolo told me that my mother always disrespected my father and called him names only because he wasn't rich. So the day I was born or the day after I was born, my father decided to go away. He was tired of all the insults he got from Malebo.

Me: Malebo?

Mish: It's my mother.

Me: It's the day after you were born.

Mish: Excuse me?

Me: Your father left you after the day you were born.

Mish: And how do you know that?

Me: I am guessing.

Mish: (Laughs) Danny, you are weird. Daniel Molefe left on the day I was born... Well, actually I don't remember. How would I even know?

Me: You know his name?

Mish: Yes, I do.

Me: Have you seen his photos?

Mish: No, Malebo burnt all his photos.

Me: Your mom is evil, isn't she?

Mish: Very evil.

Me: So don't you hate your father for being a coward?

Mish: No, I don't. My sisters and I believe that our father is our hero. He left us because he wanted to go out there to make money, unfortunately he never came back to us. He's very bad.

Me: What if he looked for you and couldn't find you because you are now married?

Mish: Well, he probably did.

Me: I think he did. Did you ever try to look for him?

Mish: No. We didn't want to hurt ourselves.

Me: I see.

Mish: Danny, it's now 14:00, I was supposed to go to work in the morning.

Me: It's not necessary for a daughter of a rich man to go to work. It's also not necessary for a wife of a rich man to go to work.

Mish: Daughter of a rich man?

Advertisement

26, 26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: Obviously your father is rich wherever he is.

Mish: I pray that he is. Oh, let me tell you something... Malebo and Bob are now together and Bob is now broke so if my father is rich, I'd be very happy and I'd like Malebo to see him so that she can feel bad.

Me: (Giggles) Smart girl.

Mish: I'll go now.

Me: Please wait, I need to tell you something.

Mish: Okay, I am listening.

Me: Samantha Anderson had asked me to kill you and your loved ones but I failed to do so.

Mish: WHAAAT??? You mean that I've just fallen into a trap?

Me: I am really not going to harm you.

Mish: Why? What's special about me?

Me: Everything.

Mish: Old man, you are very handsome but you are not falling in love with me, right? You are old enough to be my father and I am happily married.

Me: (Laughs) Mish... No.

Mish: So why am I special?

Me: You remind me of my daughter, that's all.

Mish: Where's she?

Me: Her mother took her away from me, they are staying far away from me.

Mish: Why?

Me: Uhm...I... Because of the person I am and the things I do.

Mish: I wish you were my father. Some people are ungrateful. I'd do anything to get my father back in my life. Whether he's a murderer or not, whether he's a gangster or not, whether he's a womanizer or not, whether he's poor or rich, I'd really accept my father the way he is and change him.

Me: I also wish you were my daughter. You are so understanding.

Mish: Thank you, Danny. Let me get going.

Me: Okay.

Mish: Uhm... Look, my sister, Bonolo is pregnant so can you please protect her at all times?

Me: Consider it done but make sure that she doesn't know that I am the one protecting her. I'll send my men to guard her house.

Mish: Thank you so much, Danny.

Me: It's okay, Mish. Go well.

Mish: Thank you.

Me: Heyyy, I didn't offer you something to eat. I am sorry.

Mish: (Laughs) You obviously can't cook.

Me: I can... Better than you.

Mish: You are lying to me, Danny.

Me: Come, let's go to the kitchen and I'll cook a nice meal for you.

Mish: Are you serious?

Me: Yes, I am.

Mish: I see you don't want me to go home. It's okay, let's go to the kitchen then.

Me: (Smiles) Good.

...

We headed to the kitchen. Today, I'll cook for my daughter and Malebo cannot stop me.

...

[Aaron]

I am not so sure about my relationship with Mpho anymore. This girl is controlling and bossy. It's not something that I like. I am the prince and no woman should control me. When I arrived from work, she started arguing with me, ask me for what? I don't know. Mpho is always picking fights with me. She wants me to beg her that's why she's forever picking fights with me. I went to my bedroom and she came after me. She was really yelling at me. I went to the bathroom and locked the door. I called Mish but her phone was just ringing. Dammit, who can take this crazy girl out of my house? My phone rang, it was Trey calling. He was asking me where Mish is. I got done in the bathroom and went out. I was now tired of Mpho. I finally spoke to her.

...

Me: Get out of my house now, Mpho.

Mpho: What? Are you serious?

Me: You and I can't be together anymore, you are not the woman I fell in love with. Please pack your bags and leave my house. I am not supposed to stay with you before marriage anyway. Please go.

...

She started crying. I didn't care, I helped her pack her bags. She then spoke calmly.

...

Mpho: Please don't do this to me.

Me: I've given you many chances. You don't respect me, Mpho. I really can't be with a girl who doesn't respect me.

Mpho: Baby, please. I am sorry. Don't do this to me. I won't disrespect you again.

Me: Mpho, don't make this harder than it already is. Leave my house.

...

I walked out of the room. I've really had enough. Mpho and I should separate. I know that everyone will be mad at me but I really don't see the difference between Mpho and Leona. They

are really the same. If Mpho can talk to me the way she wants, how will she talk to my mom? My loved ones do get mad at me sometimes but they never talk to me like the way Mpho talks to me. Not even my brother, Trey speaks to me the way he wants. I don't want someone like Mpho in my life, I really don't.

...

To be continued...



37

[Mitchell / Mish]

I really had a nice day with Danny. He was right, he can cook. After eating, I left. My phone had so many missed calls and messages from Trey and Aaron. When I got home, Trey was cooking. It was really late, I guess he's mad at me. I spoke.

...

Me: Hey, baby.

Trey: Mhmm.

Me: I am sorry.

Trey: For what? Being late or not going to a very important meeting?

Me: Oh, Shit!!! Meeting?? Babe, I really forgot about it.

Trey: I'm sure you did.

Me: I'll call and apologize.

Trey: No need, your PA attended the meeting for you and told everyone that you are sick.

Me: Uhm... Okay. Well, I am sorry I couldn't cook for you.

Trey: God gave me hands.

Me: You are mad at me, right?

Trey: No.

Me: I am really sorry, Trey. I didn't mean to upset you.

Trey: Mhmm.

...

I tried kissing him but he turned his face. I went upstairs. I relaxed in the bathtub and listened to music. I was so tired so I fell asleep in the bathtub but when I woke up I was in bed. I guess Trey helped me out of the bathtub but did he even bath me? He was not even in the room so I fell asleep again. Today I was very irresponsible because of Danny. Now my husband is mad at me.

...

[Bonolo / Nolly]

I really don't understand why my house is surrounded by so many men. What's going on here? I mean it's the next day, my man is at work and there are so many armed men who are in my yard and others are outside the yard. I was really shocked. I went to one of them and spoke.

...

Me: Excuse me, what's going on here?

Him: We are doing our job.

Me: Who sent you?

Him: Your father.

...

I started laughing but this guy was damn serious. I stopped laughing and looked at him. I spoke.

...

Me: What did you say? Who's my father?

Him: Don't you know your father?

Me: Uhm... Daniel?

Him: Correct.

Me: Where's my father? Please tell me. Where is he?

Him: His mansion.

Me: Excuse me, you are not making any sense.

Him: Just go back to the house and watch TV. You are safe. The Anderson family will not harm you.

Me: My father knows everything?

Him: Yes.

Me: Please allow me to talk to my father or see him.

Him: When the time is right.

Me: Why are you doing this to me? He's my father and not your father.

Him: I am sorry, Bonolo.

Me: You even know my name? Wow.

Him: Your father loves you so much.

Me: You said something about a mansion, is my father rich?

Him: Richer than Queen Mitchell.

Me: Wow, this is great news.

Him: You'll meet your father very soon, I promise.

Me: Okay, thank you.

...

I walked back to the house. Tears of joy streamed down my face. Wow, my father still thinks about us. My father is rich. My father is now the man Malebo wanted him to be. My sisters NEED to hear this. I phoned Kitso first.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Me: Hey, babe.

Tso: Hey, sister.

Me: Guess what?

Tso: You gave birth?

Me: (Laughs) I wish.

Tso: You are getting married again?

Me: (Laughs) You are very bad at guessing.

Tso: (Giggles) Then tell me. I am at work and I can't talk for too long.

Me: Work? Since when do you have a job?

Tso: Since Delano and I went our separate ways. I have half of what Delano used to own.

Me: You go girl but when were you planning to tell us?

Tso: A lot has been happening, I didn't get the time.

Me: Mhmm, Sifiso is the real man. He made you rich.

Tso: Sifiso and Aaron.

Me: I am happy for you.

Tso: Thank you, sister.

Me: Dad is rich. Richer than us. Richer than the queen.

Tso: Dad as in like Daniel Molefe?

Me: (Smiles) Yessss!!

Tso: (Screams) Ahhhhh, where's he? Are you with him? Can I please talk to him? Pleeeeease!!

Me: (Laughs) Calm down. You are at work so behave. I also haven't met him but I'll meet him very soon.

Tso: So who told you about him?

Me: This is what happened...

...

I started telling Kitso everything. She was so happy just like me. She had to go to a meeting so we said our goodbyes. I phoned Mish.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Mish: Hey you.

Me: How are you, baby?

Mish: I am good and you?

Me: Are you sure that you are good?

Mish: Yeah, I just had a fight with Trey but I'll be fine.

Me: Sorry honey, but let me give you news that will cheer you up.

Mish: Okay, I am listening.

Me: Dad sent people to guard my house. One of the guys told me. Dad is always thinking about us, honey and he's the man Malebo wanted him to be. He's richer than the queen, he's...

Mish: Hold on, did you say dad?

Me: Yes.

Mish: Uhm... Daniel Molefe?

Me: Yes, Daniel Molefe.

Mish: Why did he send people to your house?

Me: For protection. Those men are armed.

Mish: How does father know that you need protection?

Me: I don't know but I heard that he knows everything that's going on in our lives.

Mish: Did you meet with him or talk to him?

Me: Mish, what's with all of these questions? Aren't you happy?

Mish: No-No... I am happy. Let me call you back later. I have a meeting in 2 minutes.

Me: Okay honey, please call me back later.

Mish: Will do.

...

## Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">I hung up. I am sooo having a great day. My baby was even kicking.

...

[Mitchell / Mish]

A stupid person can also tell that Danny is my father. Everything adds up. Today I didn't go to work because yesterday I missed a meeting and my PA told everyone that I am sick so today Trey said that I should stay home so that everyone can buy the PA's story. I mean, the meeting proceeds today and it will take place at work. I had to lie to Nolly so that I can go to Danny's house. I really don't understand why this Danny man lied to me. I took my gadgets and left. I drove straight to Danny's house. He let me in. I found him in the kitchen, preparing something to eat. Tears streamed down my face. He came closer to me and spoke.

...

Danny: Bad day?

Me: Daniel Molefe, hello.

...



He froze. I started shouting at him telling him how life was cruel to my sisters and I without a father figure. I cried so much. He wiped off my tears and spoke.

...

Danny: I am really sorry for everything.

Me: Why didn't you tell me sooner?

Danny: I wanted to be sure that you are indeed my daughter. I am now sure because of the DNA test.

Me: DNA test?

Danny: Please forgive me but Steve got your blood the day he...

Me: Wow, Daniel, Wow.

Danny: I am sorry baby.

Me: Do you know how happy my sisters are? Bonolo told me that you sent some men to her house.

Danny: Dammit, they were not supposed to tell her everything.

Me: Well, they told her everything and she's longing to see you. I am going to tell her to come here.

Danny: No, I can't face her.

Me: Do you love us?

Danny: Yes, I do. More than my own life.

Me: Then do the right thing.

Danny: I am nervous.

Me: Daddy, won't you give me a hug?

Danny: (Smiles) I thought you'd never ask.

...

He gave me a very warm, fatherly hug. He then kissed my forehead and spoke.

...

Danny: I will always protect you.

Me: Thank you. Do you know that I've always known about you but I didn't know that you were my father? I've known about you for so long and it sucks.

Danny: Everything will be fine now.

Me: Promise?

Danny: Yes, I promise.

Me: Thank you, daddy. Uhm... Am I allowed to call you that?

Danny: (Smiles) Yes, you are. That would really make me happy.

Me: (Smiles) Thank you so much, let me call my sisters. No, I'll send a message.

Danny: Okay.

Me: Can I also invite my husband to come here? He's mad at me because of what happened yesterday. I missed an important meeting because of you.

Danny: Okay listen, how about we do this. Today let me only be with my daughters and then tomorrow you can invite your husband.

Me: Okay, daddy.

...

I sent a message to my sisters and asked them to come to Danny's house. I sent the address but I didn't tell my sisters everything. I want to surprise them, I know that they'll be very happy to see our father. We have been longing to see him or even hear his voice.

...

[Kitso / Tso]

After attending a meeting, I went back to my office and went through my phone. I saw a message from Mish and she had sent it like 45 minutes ago. I grabbed my bag and walked out of my office. On my way to my car, I phoned Mish.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Mish: Are you coming or not?

Me: Yes, I am. Sorry, I was in a meeting.

Mish: Nolly told me.

Me: I'll be there shortly.

Mish: Okay then, bye.

Me: Bye.

...

I hung up and got in the car. I drove off. I wonder why Mish wants to see us at someone else's house. I finally arrived at this beautiful mansion. Some people are just way too rich, talk about real blessing. I was admiring the place I didn't even realize that the gate was open. I wonder how it is inside the house, it's obviously beautiful, uhm... Beyond beautiful. I drove in. I got out of the car and Mish was standing next to the house. She waved at me so I went closer to her, gave her a hug and spoke.

...

Me: What's going on?

Mish: Let's go in.

Me: Where's Kitso?

Mish: Watching her favorite TV show.

Me: Inside?

Mish: Yes.

Me: Whose house is this?

Mish: You'll find out very soon, let's go in.

Me: Sure.

...

We went in. I sat down next to Nolly and spoke.

...

Me: Bonolo, what's going on?

Nolly: I also don't know, Mish does not want to tell me.

Me: But you look relaxed. You are even watching TV like you are in your own house.

Nolly: (Smiles) That's just how I am. I tend to enjoy myself when I am feeling comfortable.

Me: Wow.

Mish: The two of you are going to love the surprise.

Me: I hope so.

...

Mish went upstairs and came back with a very handsome man. Well, we couldn't really see his face because Mish had hidden it with her hands but I could tell that he's handsome. Mish was climbing on this man's back, that's how tall the man is. He was smelling nice, masculine type of guy, with tattoos. Nolly and I were surprised, like what's going on? Is Mish leaving Trey for this man? Nolly spoke.

...

Nolly: Who is he?

Me: Exactly.

Mish: The owner of this house.

Nolly: Is he now your husband to be?

Mish: He's old enough to be my father and I am happily married.

Me: Then what's going on? Stop hiding his face. He obviously can see the floor but he can't see us since your hands are right in front of his face. Remove your hands, I am really curious.

Mish: (Smiles) Sure.

...

Mish jumped off that man's back so we saw the man's face. Nolly was so shocked. Who is this man? Why is Nolly shocked? I spoke.

...

Me: Who is he?

Mish: He was not a hunk back then but he really loved us with all his heart. Gosh, why am I talking like I ever saw him, I mean he left when I was a new born baby.

Me: I don't understand.

Nolly: Kitso, you have a very weak memory. Are you also blind?? He's our father, he's Daniel Molefe.

Me: Whaaaat???

...

I was speechless. I had mixed emotions. Daniel Molefe?? Wow. Nolly and I started shouting at him. The truth is life was never easy without him. He left us with a mistake of a woman. We were also crying. Mish was laughing, she's such a fool. She then spoke.

...

Mish: He's Danny and he's our father. Please stop yelling at him.

...

Nolly and I kept quiet. We then looked at each other and started laughing. We were obviously laughing at our stupidity, I mean how can we yell at the poor man and cry at the same time like some high school teenage girls?

...

To be continued...



[Danny]

I was really happy to see my daughters. They all gave me a hug and I must say that they were also happy to see me. We sat down and talked about so many things. It was really nice. It was nice to catch up. I cooked delicious food for them. Well, I've always loved cooking and the truth is that I am the one who taught Malebo how to cook. When I met Malebo she didn't know how to cook or even look after a baby. I was always there for Malebo but because I wasn't rich, she always had a way to hurt me. No man wants to be told that he is not a man, it's a serious insult. Well, I never had interest in women after what Malebo did to me. After eating with my daughters, I thought that I should seriously talk to them. We were in one of my bedrooms because Bonolo was not feeling well at all, she had massive back pains. Wow, I can't believe that I am going to be a grandfather. Mish, Kitso and I were sitting next to Bonolo. I spoke.

...

Me: Bonolo my baby, you have to leave the country.

Nolly: Whaaaat?? Why??

Me: You are pregnant and the Anderson family is after all of you so I think it's best if you leave the country. I have a house in Sweden, you are leaving in 5 days time.

Nolly: No, I will not go anywhere. I am the eldest daughter so I can't just up and leave.

Me: You have to.

Nolly: No, what about my sisters? What about you? I finally got the chance to meet you again after so many years. How can I just leave?

Me: Don't worry about us.

Tso: Nolly, stop being stubborn. Daddy is right.

Mish: Yes sister Nolly, you'll come back after giving birth.

Nolly: And what about my husband?

Me: You'll see him after giving birth.

Nolly: No, I lost him before, I don't want to lose him again.

Me: You won't lose him. He'll be staying with me so he won't do anything that will hurt you.

Nolly: Stay with you? Really?

Me: Yes.

Mish: That's a good idea.

Nolly: But Mish is also pregnant.

Mish: Heyyy, you are ly...

...

Mish kept quiet, she didn't finish her sentence so we all looked at her. I spoke.

...

Me: Are you pregnant, Mitchell?

Mish: Yes.

Me: Then you'll also have to go away.

Mish: You are going to have to kill me first. I can't stay away from Trey for two days so how will I stay away from Trey for months? No, I will not go anywhere, my husband is also not going to let me go. Just forget it.

Me: Why are you being stubborn?

Tso: She's always like this.

Nolly: Yes so you are wasting your time, daddy.

Me: Okay, fine Mitchell, you can stay but after 3 months of your pregnancy you have to leave.

Mish: Done.

Me: Good. Tomorrow I want to meet your husbands.

Tso: I have a boyfriend and not a husband.

Me: Then bring your boyfriend to my house tomorrow.

Tso: Okay.

Mish: Please don't say anything bad to my husband and don't say anything about his father. He's still healing.

Me: Okay, it's not a problem.

Mish: My phone is ringing, let me answer it.

...

[Tremaine / Trey]

I came back home and Mish was nowhere to be found again. She's really trouble. I phoned her.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Mish: Hey.

Me: Where are you?

Mish: I'll be home in few minutes.

Me: Where are you?

Mish: You'll understand everything tomorrow.

Me: Mitchell, it's 20:00.

Mish: Sorry, I never checked the time.

Me: Should I come pick you up?

Mish: No, I am driving. I am on my way now.

Me: Fine then, bye.

Mish: Bye.

...

I hung up. Mish did not cook again so I just had a sandwich and went to bed. At 21:30, Mish arrived so I pretended to be asleep. She kissed my forehead and spoke.

...

Mish: I am really sorry. I know that lately I've been a bad wife but what could I have done? I found my father. And he wants to meet you tomorrow. I wanted to surprise you. I am really sorry, I know that you never met your father so I don't know if my good news will make you happy. Tremaine, I love you so much and I always want to make you happy. I know that you are mad at me, I am really sorry. Goodnight.

...

She then went to the bathroom and I fell asleep.

...

[Lexy]

It's a new

Advertisement

beautiful morning. Mom and Leona are still hospitalized. My two uncles and their wives arrived yesterday. They are just here for a week. Samantha is the one who begged them to come here, I wonder what's her plan. Well, we were all having breakfast when a man who covered his face with a Balaclava broke down the door and pointed a gun at us. We were all scared and shocked. Sam spoke.

...

Sam: Who are you?

The Man: Your worst enemy.

Sam: What do you want from us?

The Man: Your lives.

Sam: Whaaat??? Who sent you?

The Man: I sent myself.

Sam: Please don't shoot us. You can have whatever you want. Do you want money?

The Man: Your lives, I said.

Sam: But why?

The Man: Because I can.

Sam: Uncles, say something, aren't you men? Say something.

...

Our uncles were so scared and couldn't talk, they are cowards. As men, we expected them to be of help but they were just useless. I spoke.

...

Me: Sir, please don't shoot us. Tell us who sent you.

The Man: Why do you think that someone would send me? Nobody sends me around, I send people around.

Me: But what do you want from us?

The Man: To settle the score.

Me: What score?

The Man: Why do you have a big mouth?

Me: Sorry but please don't hurt us. Let's talk about this.

The Man: No!!

...

The man shot my two uncles and their wives, then Cee, followed by Sam. I tried to run away but he also shot me. I really don't know what happened after being shot.

...

[Mitchell / Mish]

I woke up in the morning before Trey, kept myself hygienic clean then went to the kitchen. I prepared breakfast for Trey. I then took it upstairs to Trey. He was sleeping so peacefully. I sat down next to him and just looked at him. I was smiling, I am really happy to have him as a husband. He spoke.

...

Trey: You shouldn't stare, it's rude to stare, honey.

Me: I thought you were sleeping, sorry.

...

He opened his eyes and smiled. I also smiled and spoke.

...

Me: Are you not mad at me?

Trey: Not anymore. Look, I am happy that you found your father.

Me: Who told you about my father?

Trey: You did.

Me: When?

Trey: Last night.



Me: Were you not asleep?

Trey: No.

Me: So why did you pretend to be asleep? Was it your way of not giving me my goodnight kiss?

Trey: You can get your morning kiss.

Me: Eww... Brush your teeth first.

Trey: But you always give me a morning kiss, why should I brush my teeth? I will not brush my teeth without getting my kiss.

Me: (Laughs) Okay, come here.

...

I gave him a kiss. He got up and went to the bathroom. He brushed his teeth and came back to me. I told him to get in bed. I started feeding him. After feeding him, I took away the tray of food and he went to the bathroom to take a shower. I went to the kitchen, had something to eat then washed the dishes. Trey and I finally went to my father's house. We were late. Kitso, Sifiso, Lungile and Bonolo were already at dad's house. Well, Aaron was also there, maybe Sifiso invited him over. I wonder where Mpho is but I'll find out later. We all had a good time. As we were watching TV, I took the remote and started changing channels, I was just searching for a better channel that was playing a nice movie but something caught my

eye on the news channel. I increased the volume. "Breaking News: Today morning is a very bad morning for the Anderson family. 7 people were shot around 07:15 at the Anderson's house and unfortunately 3 died." I was shocked so I looked at Danny but the look on his face screamed "I did not do it." I spoke.

...

Me: Daddy? Did you do it?

Danny: No, I didn't.

Me: Are you sure?

Danny: Yes.

Tso: Why would dad do it? Was he going to kill them?

Me: No, it's not that. It's just that I told dad about the Anderson family so I thought that it's him.

Tso: Oh, well I think they got what they deserve.

Me: Yes, but who died? Leona and Marla are in the hospital so how come there were seven people at the house?

Nolly: It's really weird.

Me: Very weird.

...

Trey did not do it. He was sleeping in the morning around 07:15. He only woke up at 10:00. I was awake since from 07:00 so my Trey did not do it. But if Trey or Danny did not do it, then who did it? This is really weird. When my father told Lungi that Nolly has to go away until she gives birth, Lungi was not really happy but after hearing about what happened to the Anderson family, he agreed to everything father said. Things are now getting serious. We are not safe at all... like, if someone can just shoot the Anderson family just like that, who said that person can't frame us for something we didn't do? Some people know that the Anderson family and my family do not get along so it's possible to get framed. Things are really getting out of hand now, WHO SHOT THE ANDERSON FAMILY???!!!

...

To be continued...

[Author]

Nobody knows who shot the Anderson family. It was said that three people died... well, those three are not the children. Two uncles and their wives were present so the wives and one uncle died. Samantha, Cece and Lexy are in a very critical condition in the hospital. The moment, Bob Anderson heard about this, he rushed to the hospital to see his family. It's like the Anderson family is cursed, nothing good is happening to that family. I guess Karma is a real b\*\*. What goes around comes back around. The Anderson family used to trouble the Banks family so much. They also used to trouble Mish and her loved ones so they are finally paying for their mistakes. Remember Cece, whom they call Cee? Well, she found a new boyfriend ever since she moved to SA but the problem is, the boyfriend does not really love her. Yes, she thinks that the guy loves her but the truth is there's nothing like love in their relationship. Need I tell you something? Cece's boyfriend shot the Anderson family including Cece. But the question is, who is Cece's boyfriend? And what does he want from the Anderson?

...

...

It's been two weeks so obviously Bonolo is now in Sweden and Lungile is staying with Danny. Mish is still lying about the pregnancy just to protect Trey. Like, we all know what Trey might do after finding out that Mish is not really pregnant. We all know that Trey is attending counseling sessions so it's best to wait for him to completely heal then he can be told the truth. Marla and Leona are healing but Leona's arm is now worse. Bob Anderson could not give Marla the divorce papers because of what happened to the children. Everything seems to be collapsing. Will everyone be happy at the end? Mpho and Aaron are still not together. Aaron says that Mpho is too bossy for his liking. Malebo and Bob are forever fighting all because Malebo thinks that Bob gives Marla and her children more attention than her. It's clear that Malebo will never be a good mother or even a good wife, she's just useless. Danny is a great father, he got bodyguards for his loved ones.

...

[Sifiso]

Tonight I am going to propose to Kitso. I pray and hope that she won't let me down. I really love that girl and I also love the way she respects me. I just never met someone like her. I know that a lot is happening right now but I really want to propose to her. The last time she told me that she's not ready for marriage, I hope she's now ready. I am not getting any younger, I really

want to settle down. She is now at work. I didn't go to work today just so I can decorate the house and get the outfits for tonight. Her father really likes me so I won't disappoint anyone.

...

[Mitchell / Mish]

As I was at work, I remembered that I have to go get my contraceptive pills at a pharmacy. My doctor gave me a prescription letter. As I was about to go out of my office, Trey walked in. He kissed my forehead and spoke.

...

Trey: Where are you off to?

Me: Uhm... I... Why?

Trey: I'd also love to go with you.

Me: Don't you have work to do?

Trey: Nope.

Me: (Fake Smile) Uhhh... I... It's fine, I'll go alone.

Trey: Not even with your bodyguards?

Me: You know that I always go with them.

Trey: Well, I am also coming with.

Me: No, you...

Trey: I am not asking you baby, I am telling you. Let's go.

...

He said that taking my handbag from me. He then led the way. Oh Lord, what now? What will Trey say once he sees me getting contraceptive pills? He'll know that I am preventing and that I am not pregnant. Lord, please help me. I followed Trey. We got in the car with bodyguards and the driver drove off. At the traffic lights, the driver spoke.

...

The Driver: Sir Banks, where are we going?

Trey: Oh, you can ask my wife.

The Driver: Mrs Banks, where are we going?

Me: Just go straight, we are going to the pharmacy down the road.

The Driver: Okay.

Trey: For what, baby?

Me: For antibiotics.

Trey: Okay, baby.

Me: You'll wait in the car for me, right?

Trey: No, I am going in with you.

Me: No need, I'll go in with one of the bodyguards.

Trey: But...

Me: Don't make it a big deal, baby.

Trey: Fine then, I'll wait for you in the car.

Me: That's my man.

...

We finally arrived at the pharmacy. I did what I went there to do and got done. As I was about to walk out, I bumped into this other guy who had so many tattoos. The bodyguard quickly grabbed him, he wanted to beat him up so I spoke.

...

Me: It's okay, let him go.

The B: Okay, ma'am.

The Guy: Mhmm, why does a lady like you need a bodyguard?  
Who's after your life?

Me: No one. Who would be after my life?

The Guy: I don't know, you tell me.

Me: I have to go.

The Guy: Bye, beautiful.



Me: Bye.

...

The bodyguard and I went back to the car. Trey wanted to see the antibiotics I bought... well, that wasn't a problem because I had antibiotics in my bag so I just took them out and gave them to him. I don't know how he believed that I went to get antibiotics... I mean, they were not packaged and medication from the pharmacy is always packaged.

...

[Bonolo / Nolly]

Everything is going great in Sweden. Dad made sure that I get treated like a princess but the truth is I miss everyone especially my husband. I'm sure the baby also misses its father. Yes, I still don't know the sex of the baby. I want it to be a surprise the day I give birth but curiosity is killing me. There's nothing much to do in Sweden, I can't wait to give birth. It's beautiful here but my loved ones are not here to enjoy with me.

...

[Mpho]

I can't believe that Aaron and I are still not together. Everything is the Anderson's fault. Well, I am happy that the Anderson family is now in a bad condition. They are in a very bad phase

and I don't see it passing. Everyone now knows that the children did not die. The uncles and wives just happened to be at the wrong place, at the wrong time. I will fight for my man and I'll ask Mish to help me because she's the only one Aaron listens to. I wonder why. I phoned Mish.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Mish: Hey, Mpho.

Me: Hey babe, can you talk or are you busy?

Mish: I am at work but I can talk.

Me: Thanks.

Mish: So what's up?

Me: Look, Mish... Aaron really listens to you. Please ask him to take me back.

Mish: I'll try.

Me: Really?

Mish: Yes, babe.

Me: Thank you.

Mish: It's okay, babe.

Me: Bye, enjoy the rest of your day.

Mish: You too.

...

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">I hung up. I know that Mish will really help me. She's a darling.

...

[Mitchell / Mish]

I was now home when I got a call from a number I don't know. Trey was in the kitchen, he just wanted to cook for us. I answered the phone call.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Me: Hello?

Caller: Hey beautiful, how are you?

Me: Who are you?

Caller: Does it matter?

Me: You are weird.

Caller: Just like your fake pregnancy.

...

I was shocked. How does he know about my fake pregnancy?  
Yes, the caller is a male and I think that I know his voice. His voice is really familiar but where have I heard this voice?? He spoke.

...

Caller: Can't talk now?

Me: What do you want from me?

Caller: Now you are talking.

Me: Just spit it out.

Caller: You.

Me: You want me?

Caller: To meet up with you.

Me: Why?

Caller: Because.

Me: Because what?

Caller: Just come see me. I'll send the address and don't you dare tell your loved ones.

Me: What do you want from me? F\*\* off.

Caller: I'll tell your boyfriend that you are not pregnant.

Me: Who's my boyfriend?

Caller: Trey.

Me: You idiot, I am married.

Caller: Well, I'll tell your husband that you are really not pregnant.

Me: I am pregnant, so go on and tell him.

...

I hung up. I have to talk to dad. I called my father and told him everything about my fake pregnancy. He wants to see me tomorrow, I hope he's not going to judge me.

...

[Kitso / Tso]

When I arrived at home, the house was decorated so nice. What is Sifiso up to? I went to the bedroom where I found him. He kissed me and spoke.

...

Sif: Please go to the bathroom, you'll find everything there.

Me: Find everything?

Sif: Your hot water, your lingerie, your outfit and many more.

Me: What's the occasion?

Sif: Just go, baby.

Me: Okay, fine.

Sif: Please don't take too long.

Me: Okay, I won't.

...

I went to the bathroom. Mhmm, my man is romantic, the bathtub looked really amazing - Bubble bath, some cute candles on the other side of the bathtub and red rose petals. I brushed my teeth, took a bath, lotioned my body then wore my lingerie and dress. I didn't know that Sifiso got taste when it comes to women clothing. I was in love with my dress, my shoes and the jewelry. I finally got done with everything and walked out of the bathroom. I found Sifiso waiting for me, he was also looking very nice. Our outfits were red and our shoes were black. He got up from the chair and spoke.

...

Sif: Wow, you are looking very beautiful.

Me: Thank you, my baby... so tell me, what's the occasion?

Sif: Just come with me.

Me: Sure.

...

He carried me all the way downstairs. We sat by the dinning table and had our meal. I spoke.

...

Me: Very delicious, did you cook?

Sif: Yes.

Me: I really feel special right now.

Sif: Really?

Me: Yes, Delano never did something like this for me. Sorry, I didn't mean to mention his name. I just enjoy praising you at any given chance. You are the best man in my life. You've taught me the meaning of true love. You are a real man, who knows how to treat a lady. You are simply the best. Thank you so much for everything.

Sif: (Smiles) It's really nothing. You are also different from the ladies I met before. You are my happiness, Kitso and I mean it. You are the special one in my life so you should really feel special.

I was now crying. Sifiso got up and sat down next to me. He then wiped off my tears and spoke.

Sif: Are those tears of joy?

Me: Yes, I am so happy.

Sif: Those are the tears I'd like to always see in your eyes. Not any other tears. I promise to stand by you through thick and thin. I promise to always love you with all my heart. I promise never to remind you of your past. I love you baby.

Me: (Smiles) I love you more. I promise to be the best wife...  
Huh? Did I just say wife?

Sif: (Laughs) Yes, you did.

Me: Sorry.

Sif: Don't apologize, one day you'll be my wife.

Me: Would you marry someone like me?

Sif: What's wrong with you?

Me: I am not perfect.

Sif: No one is perfect. Yes, I'd marry you that's why I want you to drink your wine.

Me: (Smiles) That's why you want me to drink my wine? Huh?

Sif: Just drink it.

Me: Fine, I trust you are not trying to kill me.

Sifiso just laughed.

To be continued...



40

[Kitso / Tso]

As I was finishing my wine, something got stuck in my mouth. What did Sifiso put in my glass of wine now? I used my hand to take the thing that was stuck in my mouth. It was a ring. Sifiso pressed this other button and a very deep voice spoke; "WILL YOU MARRY ME??" I looked around and I didn't see anyone. Who's asking me to marry him? I looked at Sifiso and spoke.

...

Me: What's going on? Who just spoke?

Sif: (Smiles) Will you marry me, Kitso?

Me: Huh?? Marry you??

...

Sifiso took the ring from me and knelt down. Tears streamed down my face. Sifiso spoke.

...

Sif: Will you marry me?

Me: (Smiles) Yes, I will marry you, Sifiso Marumo. I want to be Mrs Marumo.

Sif: Really?

Me: Yes.

...

Sifiso shed a tear. He put a ring on my finger and kissed my hand. I got up from the chair, helping Sifiso get up. He then hugged me and we shared a very passionate kiss.

...

[Mitchell / Mish]

It's the next day. Trey had already left for work. I went to see my father. He let me in and I told him the reason why I lied to everyone about the pregnancy. He spoke.

...

Danny: You should tell your husband everything. I'll make him understand why you lied.

Me: Are you serious?

Danny: Yes, I am.

Me: What if he breaks up with me? I love that man.

Danny: You have to talk to him, I am here now. You won't lose him.

Me: Okay, I'll tell him after a month.

Danny: No, you'll tell him today.

Me: What? Today?

Danny: Yes, today.

Me: But...

Danny: But nothing.

Me: Okay, I'll tell him today.

Danny: Good.

Me: Where's Lungile?

Danny: Work. Aren't you also supposed to be at work?

Me: No, not today.

Danny: Are you going to spend the day with me?

Me: I wanted to go see Aaron but I'll go see him tomorrow so yes, I'll spend the day with you.

Danny: Good.

...

I spent the day with my father. At 19:00 I went home, I was with the bodyguards and the driver of course. On our way home, a massive shooting took place. We were attacked by so many men. The driver and I ran out of the car and we saw our car exploding. It was like in a movie, I couldn't believe my eyes. All the bodyguards died, I think. They were three. As the driver

and I were running, I fell. The driver wanted to help me but I told him to go.

...

Him: But madam, I...

Me: Someone has to get home to explain what happened. My leg is stuck, you have to leave me behind. Go!!

Him: Okay!!

Me: Please tell my husband that I am not pregnant and that he should go see my father for the whole story. Go now.

Him: Okay ma'am.

...

He ran away. The guy I met at the pharmacy yesterday appeared from nowhere. He laughed and spoke.

...

Him: Are you stuck?

Me: Please help me.

Him: When I phoned you, you wanted to know me, right? My name is Mike, Mike Anderson.

Me: Are you the one who phoned me last night?

Him: Yes.

Me: What do you want from me?

Him: A lot.

Me: Mike, please help me. The wood is really hurting my leg.

Him: Okay beautiful, I will help you.

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">...

He helped me up. He then held my waist from behind and spoke.

...

Him: Mhmm, you are smelling so nice.

Me: Let go of me.

Him: I killed your bodyguards. I am a great man, am I not?

Me: Why did you kill them? What do you want from me?

Him: Move or else I'll shoot you.

Me: With what gun?

Him: Can't you see my men all over this place? Move!!

Me: Where are you taking me to?

Him: Just shut up.

Me: Did you say that you are Mike Anderson?

Him: Mhmm.

Me: Are you related to Bob Anderson?

Him: Yes.

Me: How?

Him: He's my father.

Me: Really?

Him: Why don't you ask me who my mother is?

Me: Marla?

Him: That bi\*\*\*?? No, she can't be my mother.

...

I did as I was told because there was no way I can escape from so many people. We got in the car. I spoke.

...

Me: Who's your mother?

Him: Malebo Moraka.

Me: What? How?

Him: It doesn't matter.

Me: So Malebo sent you to kidnap me?

Him: I send people around, people don't send me around.

Me: Are you my brother? My half brother?

Him: I'm no one's brother.

...

He said that putting a blindfold on my eyes. I really did not want to argue or fight. This Mike guy looks cruel and he was with so many men. He also tied my hands. When we reached our destination, he carried me to the house. He threw me in bed and spoke.

...

Him: Home sweet home.

Me: Mike, what do you want from me?

Him: A lot, I said.

...

He removed the blindfold from my eyes. I spoke.

...

Me: I am pregnant you know, you have to let me go.

Him: (Laughs) Pregnant? Really?

Me: Yes.

Him: You are taking contraceptive pills, you are not pregnant.

Me: (Yells) What the f\*\*\* do you want from me?

...

He gave me a hot slap and spoke.

...

Him: Don't you dare yell at me, I am not your friend or husband.

Me: I am sorry.

...

He came closer and kissed me. I kicked him away and he got angry then took out his belt. As he was about to hit me with a belt, I spoke.

...

Me: Okay Okay, I am sorry. You can kiss me.

Him: Now you are talking. Let me tell you something, Mitchell... I always get what I want and I shot the Anderson family. Guess who's my girlfriend? My girlfriend is Cece and I also shot her.

Me: But why?

Him: Don't ask me questions or else I'll make sure that you also join everyone else in the hospital.

...



Okay, I was now scared, like super scared. What surprised me was that I wasn't crying. I really wanted to cry but I just couldn't. I was wearing a short dress but not too short so Mike started rubbing his hand on my thighs. I wanted to tell him to stop but I couldn't because I was so scared. He then kissed my thighs. What kind of a monster is Mike? The damn guy is supposed to be my brother, we share a mother so why is he doing this to me?

...

To be continued...

41

[Mitchell / Mish]

Him: You look better than Cece. You really look delicious.

Me: How do you feel dating your own sister?

Him: Good, very good. And she loves sex so much. Maybe all of my sisters love sex. Do you also love sex?

...

I shook my head. He squeezed my cheeks with his hand and spoke.

...

Him: You are lying.

Me: Ouch... You are hurting me.

Him: That's not real pain, I am still going to make you feel great pain.

...

He let go of me and then kissed me. I gave in. His hand went underneath my dress. He tried pulling down my underwear. I broke off the kiss and spoke.

...

Me: Mike, please don't.

Him: Do you want me to take it by force?

Me: No, I don't.

Him: So you have to cooperate.

Me: No, I love my husband and I can't do this. You've tied my hands and I can't do anything. Please don't do this.

Him: Do you know what? If you don't want to do this, I am going to have to tie your legs and call my men to come and enjoy your cake.

Me: No No, please don't do that.

Him: Then do what's right before it's too late. If you do what's right, I am the only one who'll get to sleep with you.

Me: No No, please don't. I am begging you.

...

He called his men. They were about 15 or more. They really wanted to rape me. My hands were tied but not my legs so I tried to fight them with my legs but they were too strong. Tears finally streamed down my face as I screamed but no one came to my rescue so I had to rescue myself from 15 men. I spoke.

...

Me: Okay fine, I'll do whatever you want, Mike. Please don't let these men sleep with me. I am begging you.

Him: Guys, guys, you can leave her. Go and lock the door on your way out.

...

Mike's men left. Mike then untied me and spoke.

...

Him: If you try to act smart with me, I won't have any mercy on you. I'll let all of those men sleep with you.

Me: Okay, I hear you. I swear I won't make you angry.

Him: Good girl.

...

He asked me to take off my dress. I did as I was told. He kissed every part of my body and went down on me. I let him do everything he wanted to do just because I didn't want to end up being forced by 15 men. He then sucked my toes. If he was mine

I was going to enjoy all of this but I wasn't enjoying because the guy was forcing me and he's also my brother. Tears were just falling from my eyes. He then spoke.

...

Him: I am so sorry but I am not going to use protection.

Me: Please use it.

Him: I can use it with anyone else but not you.

Me: Why?

Him: Because you look like you are good in bed.

Me: I am HIV positive.

Him: (Laughs) I know everything about you. You are not HIV positive.

Me: And what if you are HIV positive? What kind of a psychopath are you?

Him: I am not. I am a very responsible guy. Oh, and I am not a psychopath.

...

He got undressed. He wasn't joking. He didn't wear protection. He slid his big thing in and out of my cookie. I looked to the other side. He was moaning and groaning like a dog that he is. He then whispered in my ear; "I'll make you pregnant so that you won't have to lie to your husband." He said that releasing sperm inside my cookie. I've never met a guy cruel like this guy before. Just after raping me. One guy came in and pushed this other girl in bed. The moment the girl raised her face I cried so much. She was my sister, Kitso. She was also crying. Mike then spoke to his man.

...

Mike: Is it done? Did you kill her husband?

The Man: Yes boss, I did.

Mike: Good, you can go out now.

...

The guy went out. Kitso and I shared a hug but Mike pulled me away from Kitso and tied me to a tiny pole in the room. He tied Kitso's hands all because Kitso was fighting and screaming. He also did the things he did to me... to Kitso. I couldn't help but cry. Did that guy kill Sifiso? Why is Mike doing this? He also did not use protection with my sister and he also did not pull out. I've never seen this cruelty in my whole life. After enjoying Kitso, Mike untied me and also untied Kitso then left. I wore my dress and also helped Kitso to dress up. We held hands and just stared at the roof. Kitso spoke.

...

Tso: He is Malebo's son.

Me: I know.

Tso: He's very cruel just like Malebo.

Me: I hate Malebo and the Anderson family so much.

Tso: Me too.

Me: Did they kill Sifiso?

Tso: No, they killed the wrong person.

Me: My marriage will collapse once again.

Tso: And my engagement will collapse, Sifiso proposed.

Me: Life is so unfair.

Tso: Very unfair. I am happy that Bonolo is not around.

Me: Yes.

Tso: I love you, Mitchell.

Me: I love you more, Kitso.

...

We couldn't help it. We cried so much and tried to comfort one another. We finally fell asleep.

...

To be continued...

42

I wonder where Mish is. I can't reach her on the phone and it's so late. I called her father.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Danny: Heyy, it's late. I am sleeping.

Me: I am sorry but haven't you seen Mish today?

Danny: She was with me for the whole day.

Me: So where's she now?

Danny: You mean that she never came home?

Me: No.

Danny: Have you tried calling her?

Me: Yes.

Danny: And?

Me: Voicemail.

Danny: Please try calling Aaron. Mish is probably with him. She wanted to go see him today but I asked her to spend the day with me.

Me: Okay then, bye.



Danny: Please get back to me.

Me: I will.

...

I hung up and called Aaron.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Aaron: Good timing. I was about to call you. I am with Sifiso, he is looking for Kitso. He says that Kitso went to a late night meeting, now she's not back and her phone is off.

Me: Kitso is not here. And where's Mish?

Aaron: Is Mish also not home?

Me: You mean she's not with you?

Aaron: No, she's not.

Me: She's not with her father, she's not with Kitso and she's not with you, so where's she?

...

The driver came in running. He was so dirty, sweating and he was also limping. I spoke to Aaron.

...

Me: Please don't hang up. Mish's driver is in a bad state, this can only mean one thing. MISH IS IN DANGER!!!

...

The driver fell down. This guy better not lose conscious without telling me anything. I ran to him and knelt down next to him. I spoke.

...

Me: What happened? What's wrong?

Him: Your wife...Your Wife... I...

Me: Just speak up. What happened to my wife?

Him: Kidnapped. Accident. Many men. Guns. Explosion. Stuck leg. Not pregnant, go to your father in-law for...for... the whole story of the pregnancy. I...I...

Me: What are you saying?

Him: The tattooed man. Pharmacy. An-An-Antibiotics.

...

He lost conscious. I took the phone and spoke to Aaron.

...

Me: I...

Aaron: I heard everything. I understand everything. I am coming to your house now. I am coming with Sifiso.

Me: Okay, bye.

...

After talking to Aaron. I called my doctor and carried the driver to bed. I started thinking about everything. Mish is not pregnant. She lied to me and her father knows everything. Why did Mish do this to me? She went to the pharmacy to get antibiotics and met a tattooed man, but who's the tattooed man? I never saw him. The doctor arrived and attended to the driver. I waited for Aaron and Sifiso in the kitchen. As I was in the kitchen, I remembered that Danny said that I should get back to him. I called him and told him everything. He asked for my address. Aaron and Sifiso arrived. We waited for Danny and he also arrived. He was fuming. He then spoke.

...

Danny: I will kill them!!!! I will kill them!!!!

Me: I am with you on that one but tell me something. Is Mish pregnant or not?

Danny: Is that really important right now?

Me: Father, answer me please.

Danny: Mish is not pregnant, she lied because of you.

Me: (Shouts) Rubbish!!! She told me a big lie.

...

Danny started telling me everything. Mish lied to protect me but I am still not happy. I will never forgive her. I spoke.

...

Me: Let's just find Mish and Kitso.

Danny: What exactly did the driver tell you?

Me: It looks like when we went to the pharmacy, Mish met a tattooed man. I think that she got kidnapped by that tattooed man. The driver was not clear enough but I think that I understood everything.

Danny: Did you see the tattooed man?

Me: No, I was waiting for Mish in the car.

Danny: Dammit... No one went inside with Mish? What was the use of bodyguards then?

Me: Oh, No. She was with one bodyguard.

Danny: Please don't tell me that he's also dead.

Me: He's not. He was with me for the whole day today. He was my driver for the day.

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Danny: Great. Where's he now?

Me: He must be downstairs.

Danny: So go call him.

Me: I will.

...

As I was about to go, something caught my attention on the news channel. We all watched the TV. "Breaking News: A business lady was at RCC restaurant close to the RCC building today when a group of men who wore balaclavas walked in and dragged her out of the restaurant. A man that was with her got shot and died at the same time. Everyone who tried to help the young lady got shot. Fortunately the camera caught everything that happened but the criminals' face could not be seen. Here's the girl's face, please help us find her." The moment they showed the girl's face, We all got angry. The girl happened to be Kitso. I spoke.

...

Me: Why would Kitso and Mish get kidnapped on the same day? What if they are kidnapped by same people?

Sifiso: Tremaine Leano Banks, can you just get the damn bodyguard? You are wasting time!!!!

...

I called the bodyguard. I told him everything that the driver said. Danny spoke.

...

Danny: Did you see the man?

BG: Yes, and I wanted to beat him up but Mrs Banks stopped me.

Sifiso: If you could see him again would you recognize him?

BG: Yes, I would.

Danny: The pharmacy is closed. Tonight will just search for the girls, and tomorrow I'll get the CCTV footage of the pharmacy.

Me: That's a great idea.

Danny: Aaron, I need you to go to my house. Lungile is there, you are going to have to tell him everything.

Aaron: Okay, sir.

Danny: You too, Sifiso.

Sifiso: No I am going with you.

Me: Sifiso, listen to father, you and Aaron are lawyers. You can't get your hands dirty. Father and I will shoot to kill, please stay out of this.

Sifiso: But...

Aaron: Sifiso, listen to Trey. He's right. If we all end up in trouble, who'll get us out of trouble? You and I are the best lawyers. We never lose in court so if we get in trouble now, we going to be doomed.

Sifiso: Oh yeah, I never looked at it in that way.

Aaron: It's because you are hurt. Well, I understand. Let's get going, we should go see Lungile.

Sifiso: Okay.

...

Sifiso and Aaron left. Danny and I got so many men. We were all armed. We then left the house.

...

[Malebo]

I just saw the news. Who kidnapped my daughter? I have to talk to Bob. He was sleeping but I woke him up. He spoke.

...

Bob: What's going on?

Me: Your son kidnapped my daughter. He mentioned it before and now he did it.

Bob: So what should I do?

Me: Stop him of course. You have to do something, Bob.

Bob: I am sleeping.

Me: So you only care about your sleep?

Bob: Not now please.

...

He covered himself with a blanket. I can't believe this. Is this broke man doing this to me? I was planning to buy him a new car since he lost everything, now I won't. He only cares about Marla and her children. I know that Mike is the one who shot Bob's children and I won't tell. I wish that they had died right then and there. They are all in my way of getting the attention of Bob. I left the bedroom and went downstairs. I then called Mike.

...

[Phone Conversation]

Mike: Hey, mom.

Me: Do you really consider me as your mom?

Mike: Yes why?

Me: When you said that you'll kill your father's children and my children, were you serious?



Mike: Yes, right now I have Mish and Kitso and I slept with them. I am going to sleep with them again after an hour.

Me: Mike, you are a monster. They are your siblings.

Mike: (Laughs) I know.

Me: Why are you doing this?

Mike: Because I want all the attention from my parents.

Me: You are a sick bastard. As old as you are, you still want attention from us? You always get the attention and you always got it. My daughters hate me because I never had time for them.

Mike: Are you now insulting me because of your stupid children? Do you see what I am talking about? Your children are my obstacles.

Me: Mike, you have to stop what you are doing because you will lose me. You've always been my first priority, so why are you doing this?

Mike: Did you just say that I will lose you?

Me: Yes, and I am serious.

Mike: Then you'll lose your children like now.

...

He hung up on me. What kind of a monster is Mike? I gave birth to a monster. What should I do now? If I tell the police, Mike will definitely hate me.

...

To be continued...

43

[Kitso]

Mike came to the room and he was so angry. I think Mish was really sleeping so I also pretended to be asleep. Mike spoke.

...

Mike: Wake up, girls.

...

We still didn't wake up so Mike poured water on us. We woke up and I must say that we were so damn wet. Mish then spoke.

...

Mish: Mike, what's wrong now?

Mike: You two should get undressed.

Mish: Why?

Mike: Because I am horny.

Mish: Then get a dog to sleep with.

...

Mike gave Mish a hot slap. I got angry and bit Mike's forearm and he also gave me a hot slap. He spoke.

...

Mike: Are you two seriously trying to fight me?

Mish: Mike, let me tell you something, my father and my husband will find us and they'll definitely kill you. You are a monster, you are just like your mother and father - An apple does not fall far from its tree but you will regret ever crossing us.

Mike: (Laughs) Is that a threat?

Mish: No sweetie, it's the truth.

Me: Mish, just keep quiet.

Mike: You should listen to your sister, Mish.

Mish: Just shut up, Mike. Shut the f\*\* up!!!!

Mike: Are you challenging me?

...

The unexpected happened. Mish slapped Mike and it was soooo real. I was so shocked. Mike was also shocked. He then spoke.

...

Mike: Did you just slap me?

Mish: Do you want me to do it again?

Mike: Oh wow, you are brave, aren't you?

Mish: Why not?

...

Mish and Mike started arguing. Mike got undressed and tried to force himself on us again. The unexpected happened yet again- Mish bit Mike's D. Mike screamed his lungs out. That bite was really real and deep. I laughed and spoke to Mish.

...

Me: Wow, you are amazing.

Mish: I am with you that's why I've got the strength.

Me: What if his men...

26, 26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Mish: Shhh, the room got soundproof so they didn't even hear him scream. Let's beat him up now.

Me: Let's first tie him.

Mish: You are right.

...

Mike was bleeding. He couldn't do anything, he really did not have the strength. We tied him and started beating him up. It was so much fun. The bloody scoundrel had a phone in his pocket. Mish took it out and phoned our father. I heard Mish

telling Danny everything but she couldn't tell where we are. I spoke to Mish.

...

Me: Send him the location.

Mish: Mhmm, I will.

...

Mish sent the location to father. After talking to father, Mish spoke.

...

Mish: Heyyy Mike, my father will soon be here, we are going to make sure that you don't get away from us.

Mike: You...You...Will regret thi-thi-this.

Me: Oh, just shut up Mike. You are the one who will regret everything. Your penis is bleeding, can't you die like now???

Please???

Mish: (Laughs) Maybe I should bite it again. Males like Mike does not deserve to live. He's a monster.

...

I thought that Mish was joking but no she wasn't, she bit it again. It was so scary. The guy got a huge D but now it was bleeding and it had cuts and I am talking about deep cuts. What

are Mish's teeth made of?? Wow!! Mike screamed until he lost conscious. If Mike's men could walk in, we are so dead. I spoke to Mish.

...

Me: Thank you, sister

Mish: For what?

Me: For doing what I couldn't do. You are really brave.

Mish: But you helped me so we are both brave.

Me: Well, I am not brave like you.

Mish: It's okay. Are you okay?

Me: I am scared.

Mish: Me too. I am also really scared even after biting his thing.

Me: What's going to happen if we get pregnant?

Mish: Let's just pray that daddy will be here before it's too late. We'll take the morning after pill in the morning.

Me: Yes, you are right. It's now 23:58.

Mish: I hope daddy will come to the rescue. If not, we are dead. Mike's men might come to check up on Mike so I pray that our father will arrive before then.

Me: What if Mike's men...

...

I couldn't finish my sentence because someone was at the door... like, someone was trying to open the door. We saw the door handle moving. I looked at Mish and we both started panicking. There were no weapons to fight with in the room so we got scared. We then decided to stand behind the door. What's our plan? To run out of the room once the person who's outside the door gets in, we know that it's risky but it's the only plan we have. We can't just die like that, we have to try something to get out of this place.

...

To be continued...



44

[Mitchell / Mish]

The door opened and before we could run, dad was standing right before us. He gave us a hug and spoke.

...

Danny: Everything will be fine, but where's the boss?

Tso: (As She Points) Over there. He must be dead. Mish bit his penis twice.

Danny: Trey, come over here now.

...

Trey walked in. I tried hugging him but he pushed me aside. How can Trey treat me like this at a time like this? Does he not care about me at all? This one hurts more than anything. He spoke to Kitso.

...

Trey: Are you okay?

Tso: Yes, thanks to Mish. She is brave.

Danny: There's the man who troubled my daughters.

Me: He's our brother.

Danny: What do you mean?

Me: He's Malebo's son.

Danny: So did Malebo send him?

Me: I don't know.

Danny: Is the father Bob?

Tso: Do you know that man?

Danny: Yes.

Me: Yes, he's the father.

Trey: I don't understand why you are all chatting. Let's get out of this place before the cops arrive.

Danny: We are taking that dog.

Trey: Sure, you'll find me outside.

...

It's clear that Trey is mad at me. He walked out and some men walked in and took Mike. There were so many dead bodies outside and inside. We all went to daddy's house. Trey was not giving me attention so I ran into Aaron's arms and cried my lungs out. Aaron spoke.

...

Aaron: You are safe now, don't cry.

Me: You don't get it. Mike raped us and he didn't pull out.

Trey: He was helping you get pregnant, don't you want a baby?

Aaron: Trey, not now.

Trey: It's the truth. I am going back to my house.

Danny: You can leave when the sun is out. Go to sleep.

Trey: Okay then.

...

Trey went upstairs. Kitso and Sifiso went to bed as well. I was raped and my husband does not care, wow. What am I still doing with Trey? I don't deserve to be treated like this no matter what. Danny spoke.

...

Danny: Don't worry, my daughter. Trey will be fine.

Me: Thanks.

Danny: Go to sleep. Lungile and I need to take care of something.

Aaron: Come, Mish. I'll take you to bed.

Me: Sure.

...

Aaron carried me to Trey's bedroom. Trey looked at me and spoke.

...

Trey: What's going on, Aaron?

Aaron: What do you mean?

Trey: I mean why's she here?

Aaron: You are so ungrateful. Mish lied to protect you but you are here talking rubbish. Another man slept with your wife and you don't care. You are really ungrateful.

Trey: Thank you.

...

Aaron put me in bed. I spoke.

...

Me: No, Aaron. I'll sleep in the other bedroom after taking a bath.

Aaron: No, you'll sleep with your husband.

...

Aaron then left. Trey looked at me then switched off the lights. I spoke.

...

Me: I am sorry for everything. I lied because you were going crazy.

Trey: Are you here to sleep or to make noise?

Me: (Cries) I just want a hug from my husband, am I asking for too much?

Trey: (Shouts) Mitchell, don't you dare irritate me. Why are you making noise? Can't you just keep your mouth shut?

...

I got up and went to the bathroom. When I got to the bathroom, I cried so much. People will always see the wrong things you do, not the right things... It hurts. I ran myself a hot bath and just relaxed in the bathtub.

...

[Kitso / Tso]

Sifiso is a real man. I thought that after hearing about what happened, he'd distance himself from me but he didn't. He was really there for me. When I was taking a bath, he was sitting on the toilet sit. I was so uncomfortable, I mean Mike forced himself on me. Sifiso spoke.

...

Sif: I see that you are uncomfortable. I'll leave.

Me: No, don't leave.

Sif: Are you sure?

Me: Yes, I am.

Sif: Okay. Do you think that Trey and Mish are okay?

Me: No. Trey is mad. Mish told me about the fake pregnancy.

Sif: Trey is unfair. Mish lied because she wanted to protect him.

Me: Yeah, you are right.

Sif: Tell me, what's wrong with your mom?

Me: What do you mean?

Sif: I mean why is she evil? Everything is wrong because of her.

Me: I know hey. I am very happy that Bonolo is not around. Mike was targeting all of Malebo's children and all of Bob's children.

Sif: He's not normal.

Me: Sifiso, thank you for everything.

Sif: Don't mention it, babe.

Me: Can I ask?

Sif: Go ahead.

Me: Do you still want to marry me?

Sif: Yes I do.

Me: Do you mean that?

Sif: Yes. Nothing changed. I still love you.

Advertisement

0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: Would you still make love to me?

Sif: Yes I would.

Me: Like before?

Sif: Yes.

Me: You are one in a million.

Sif: Do you think so?

Me: Yes, I do.

Sif: Thank you, baby.

Me: No babe, Thank you.

...

He gave me a kiss. I got out of the bathtub and got done with everything. Sifiso and I went to bed. He didn't want to let go of me. I felt save wrapped around his arms. I really never knew that love is this beautiful. I never knew that it's nice to be loved. I felt so special and once again, I was soooo in love with Sifiso.

...

[Malebo]

I was so shocked when Daniel showed up at my place. He had bodyguards with him. The car he was driving was out of this world, just soooo beautiful. He spoke.

...

Danny: Are you going to let me in or not?

Me: Sure, come in.

...

They all came in. He was with Lungile and so many men. Danny spoke.

...

Danny: Where's he?

Me: Who?

Danny: Your Bob.

Me: He's sleeping.

...

We heard Bob screaming upstairs so we all went to his bedroom. We found Trey using electric shock down there... Uhm, I mean Trey tied Bob on the chair and he was torturing Bob with electric shock. I spoke.

...



Me: Trey, what are you doing?

Trey: What I should've done a long time ago.

Danny: When did you get here?

Trey: It doesn't matter.

Me: Trey, please stop.

Danny: Why? He's broke. Aren't you after rich men?

Me: Daniel, please stop.

Danny: I am just asking.

Bob: Trey my son, I am sorry.

Trey: (Laughs) You are too late and I am not your son.

Danny: Bob, don't you want to know where your son is?

Me: Where's my son? Daniel, please don't be like this.

Danny: Your son forced himself on my daughters and you want me to have mercy? Nooo, I am waiting for your son to regain conscious then I will torture him until he dies. He's with my doctor.

Me: (Cries) Please, Daniel. Let go of my son, do it for our love.

Danny: (Laughs) Our love? What love?

Bob: So you still love Daniel, Malebo?

Danny: She never loved me, she's a liar.

Trey: Guess what, Bob Anderson?? Your family woke up from the coma but I took them to their graves.

Bob: What do you mean?

Trey: When I got to the hospital, your family was awake. They saw me but I killed all of them. What surprises me is the fact that before I got to your wife, she was already dead. So who killed your wife?

...

Mish walked in and spoke.

...

Mish: I did and I am here to kill Bob.

Danny: (Shouts) What is wrong with you, Mish?

Mish: Daddy, don't shout at me.

Me: Did you all really unite?

Danny: Yes.

Me: And everything is fine?

Mish: Of course. If you were not my mother, I was going to kill you as well, Malebo.

Me: You are not a monster baby, put away the gun.

Mish: No. My husband hates me and it is the Anderson family's fault. When I got to Bob's children's rooms, unfortunately Trey had already killed them. My aim was to kill every Anderson. I killed Marla and I will kill Bob.

Trey: Mitchell, stop it. Put away the gun. What is wrong with you?

Bob: Mitchell, my daughter, please don't...

...

Mitchell pulled the trigger. She shot Bob 10 times. I cried and ran out of the house. When I got outside, the cops were already there.

...

Cop1: Ma'am, we were just passing by and we heard gunshots here. What happened?

Me: Nothing. It's just fireworks, I know that they sound like gunshots but you don't have to worry. Who let you in?

Cop2: The gate was open.

Me: You may go. Nothing is wrong.

Cop2: So why are you crying?

Me: I am crying because I miss someone, is it a crime to cry?

Cop2: No.

Me: So go, please.

Cop1: Okay, bye ma'am.

They left. I went to the gate and it was destroyed. Daniel and his bodyguards must have done this. I can't believe Mish just killed Bob. I went back inside. Mish spoke.

Mish: What did you tell those cops?

Me: Did you all see the cops?

Mish: Yes, we did.

Me: I told them that it was just fireworks.

Mish: Why didn't you tell them the truth? Why?

Me: Because you are my daughter and I love you.

Mish: Well, I hate you and I will not thank you for what you did.

She walked out. Daniel's men cleaned up and took away the body. They didn't want to give it to me, that's really heartbreaking. Like, why can't they let me have the body so that I can arrange for the funeral? Why do they have to be heartless? Why can't they allow me to bury the man I love?

...

To be continued...

45

[Mitchell / Mish]

I didn't go to daddy's house, I went to my house. I packed my bags and wrote a letter for Trey. As I was about to walk out with my bags, Trey walked in. He stood before me and spoke.

...

Trey: Where are you going?

Me: I don't know.

Trey: What do you mean?

Me: I am leaving you. You are a very ungrateful person. You don't appreciate me, and I feel like everything is falling apart. I've done what I always wanted to do. I killed Bob and Marla for you so you will be happy once again. You'll find a perfect wife, I am not perfect and you remind me whenever I am in the wrong. I faked the pregnancy because I wanted you to feel like you have a reason to always be at home. You were always out there, attacking the Anderson family even in public so I did everything for you but you don't care. Look, I understand that you are angry but do you really have to punish me? I love you, Tremaine but I can't do this anymore. I want divorce.

Trey: Are you serious?

Me: Yes, move away please.

Trey: You can't do this to me. I can't live without you, Mish. I love you.

Me: I know you love me but sometimes love is not enough. I remember when we got married you told me that I should take contraceptive pills because you were not ready to have a baby so I've been taking contraceptive pills to prevent pregnancy but when you found out about the fake pregnancy you turned your back on me. Tell me Trey, do you want a baby?

Trey: Yes I do.

Me: So why didn't you tell me?

Trey: I thought that you were going to deny me a child. Please forgive me, baby. I am sorry for everything. Give me one last chance.

Me: I've given you so many chances in life.

Trey: Won't you give me one last chance? Please. If I don't change after one last chance, you are allowed to give me the divorce papers.

Me: One last chance?

Trey: Yes, please.

Me: Does that mean you have forgiven me?

Trey: Yes, I have.

Me: Thank you.

Trey: No, Thank you. I love you.

Me: I love you more. If the cops find out that you killed Anderson's children, I'll take the blame. It was my plan all along.

Trey: Are you crazy? Why would you take the blame?

Me: Because I don't want you to go to jail.

Trey: I will never go to jail for murder, I never leave loose ends. The cops will not find out. Yes, they probably saw the dead bodies at the hospital but they won't know that it's me. I am not stupid, you know? I've got this.

Me: Well, I am your wife and I am also not stupid. I took care of everything and the cops won't know that I killed Marla.

Trey: And Bob? Won't your mother tell the truth?

Me: I don't think she will and there's no proof. I know her house in and out so I took care of everything. Tell me, where's Mike?

Trey: I don't know where they took him.

Me: That guy is heartless, we can't keep him alive. He's going to kill all of us once he finds out about his father. He doesn't give a

damn about his sisters and Marla but he'll surely make us pay for what we did to Bob.

Trey: Yeah, you are right so what do we do?

Me: We must get rid of him before it's too late.

Trey: He should die a slow painful death. How dare he sleep with my wife? How dare he??? Bloody Scoundrel!!!

...

All of a sudden, Trey started taking out his anger on the furniture. This is what happens when a person hides his pain - once he explodes, he explodes like a very dangerous, huge bomb. My man is... a lil bit crazy. As he was about to punch the window, I stood before him. He almost punched me, he looked at me and spoke.

...

Trey: Move!!

Me: No!!

Trey: (Shouts) I said move away, Mishy. Move away!!

...

I stood on my toes to get a lil bit taller. I wrapped my arms around his neck and kissed him. I thought that he was going to



push me away but he didn't. We shared a very passionate kiss.  
He then spoke.

...

Trey: I love you.

Me: I love you too.

Trey: Let's go to bed, it's really late.

Me: Sure.

...

We went to bed. I spoke.

...

Me: I promise you that I will get rid of Mike's sperm in my body.  
Won't you go with me to the doctor when we wake up?

Trey: I'll go with you.

Me: Thank you, baby.

...

We cuddled until we fell asleep. Why is there something like marriage? Nothing is easy in marriage. I almost walked away from my marriage because I am really tired of everything. I hope that everything will be fine from now on.

...

[One Month Later]

[Bonolo]

Today my loved ones visited me. I was so happy to see everyone. I also watched TV and I saw that the Anderson family are no more, from parents to children... so could it be that my loved ones are behind the Anderson's death? Well, they just arrived in Sweden so I can't just start asking them questions. Mish spoke.

...

Mish: Sister, we are all going out.

Me: Mish, why's your tummy still small? When is it going to show?

Mish: I was never pregnant.

Me: So why did you lie?

Mish: It's a long story.

Me: So where are we going?

Mish: Out.

Me: Where?

Mish: Lunch.

Me: Aren't you all tired?

Mish: No, we are fine. Get up, let's go. I want you to wear something nice and stand out.

Me: But why? I look fine. I just wore this dress.

Mish: Let's go to your room. You seriously need to change. Your dress is nice but not for going out. We are going out so at least look the part.

Me: Okay.

...

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">I changed my dress. Mish got me a very beautiful white fitted dress. We all left the house. I was never allowed to leave the house so it feels great to be out of the house. I was really starving. We went to this other fancy place, the moment we walked in everyone shouted "Surprise". Wooow, who are these people? Baby shower???? For me???? Wow, I looked at my loved ones and thanked them. I really thought that I wasn't going to get a baby shower, I mean a lot has happened and my loved ones were in South Africa. The day went well. The food was nice, everyone was happy and I was also happy. I got so many gifts from the people, even strangers. The moment I got up my water broke. I was so nervous, am I giving birth? I started yelling at everyone. Lungile spoke.

...

Lungi: What's wrong with you?

Me: (Shouts) Why should something be wrong with me?

Mish: Sister, your water broke.

Me: (Shouts) Do you think that I don't know that?

Tso: So why didn't you say?

Me: (Shouts) Just shut up, Kitso. I am scared!!

Tso: A big girl like you???? You are going to...

Me: Just shut up, please!!!!

...

I started experiencing cramps. I was taken to the hospital.

...

[Danny]

My daughter is going to give birth today. We still have Mike, maybe I should listen to Mish and Trey, I should just kill Mike.

Mish and Trey sat next to me and spoke.

...

Mish: Daddy, if something happens to Bonolo's baby because of Mike, I'll never forgive you.

Me: Okay fine, I'll get rid of Mike but Malebo will not be happy.

Mish: Do you care?

Me: Not really but I am worried about you and your husband. If I kill Mike, Malebo will tell the cops everything.

Mish: Where's she going to get the proof?

Me: I don't know.

Trey: Danny still loves Malebo.

Me: Noways, I don't.

Trey: Are you sure?

Me: Yes, I am.

Mish: Then let me kill him, I don't mind.

Trey: Mish No, you are not a murderer.

Mish: (Laughs) You are funny, babe.

Trey: I am serious Mishy, you are not going to kill people anymore.

Mish: Do you think that I enjoy killing people? I don't but sometimes a person is forced by the situation.

Me: Mitchell, leave everything to me. I'll do something about Mike.

Mish: Make it fast, time is not on our side.

Me: Fine then.

...

The doctor came out and told us that Bonolo gave birth to a baby boy. We were so happy. They allowed us to go in. Lungile and Bonolo named the baby Lindokuhle. The doctors said that Bonolo will be discharged tomorrow so we all went home except for Lungile.

...

[Malebo]

I still can't believe that my man is no more. I can't believe that Danny has got my son but he's not willing to let him go. It's not nice at all. I am so alone. As I was in the kitchen, the door bell rang. I opened the door. There was a girl I don't know outside. Well, I got a new gate so it was getting painted. This girl must have let herself in. I spoke.

...

Me: Hey, how can I help you?

Her: My name is Mpho, I am your daughters' friend. Do you know where I can find them? I've been looking for them for so long.

Me: Who are my daughters?

Her: Mitchell, Kitso and Bonolo.

Me: They are not here. Please come in.

Her: Thanks.

...

We sat down. I spoke.

...

Me: Would you like something to eat? Or drink?

Her: Water is fine, thanks.

...

I gave her water and she started crying. I spoke.

...

Me: What's wrong?

Her: Ma'am, do you think that it's fair to be separated from the man you love?

Me: Who sent you here? Why are you talking about Bob?

Her: Bob? Who's Bob?

Me: Oh... Who are you talking about then?

Her: I am talking about Aaron, he's Trey's brother. He broke up with me and I asked Mish to help me get Aaron back but it's like she doesn't want.

Me: What do you really want?

Her: Aaron.

Me: So don't get Mish involved and does Aaron want you back?

Her: (Shouts) HEYYY, DON'T YOU DARE TALK RUBBISH!!!!  
AARON IS ONLY MINE AND MISH MUST HELP ME GET AARON  
BACK OR ELSE...

Me: Or else what? Don't talk to me like that, I am not your friend.

...

What a weird girl. She took a knife and started slowly licking it. She then spoke.

...

Her: If I don't get Aaron back then I'll destroy your daughters' lives. I'll make sure that nothing good comes out of their marriage and this knife will end Mish's life. Aaron only listens to her so she better help me. Talk to Mish for me or else everyone will pay.



Me: You are psychotic. You need serious help. Get out of my house now and put down that knife, you can't afford it.

Her: (Laughs) Bye.

Me: What an evil girl.

...

She put down the knife and walked out of the house. This knife was easily reachable because I was using it before I opened the door for that mad girl. I phoned Mish but I couldn't reach her. This life is really not good. Everything is falling apart. Mish's life is in danger and she doesn't know. Nooo, my daughters' lives are in danger but because they hate me with all their hearts, they won't allow me to help them. The only thing I can do is to keep an eye on that Mpho chick. I know that I am not a good mother but I won't just sit down and let Mpho destroy my daughters' lives. The thing is they won't see her coming so I need to help them.

...

To be continued...

46

[Author]

...

[One Month Later]

Mpho showed everyone her true colors. Trey and Mish are now fine. Lindokuhle is such a beautiful baby, he's so adorable and his parents love him so much. Kitso and Sifiso got married yesterday and went to their honeymoon, they'll be back after two weeks. Malebo is slowly forgetting about Bob and she's not planning to say anything to the cops. Well, the cops closed the case - The one about the murder of the Andersons. Mike is still alive, everyone decided to keep him alive but they made sure that they make him lose his memory. Everyone deserves a second chance. Yes, Mike is a very bad person but everyone wants to change him to the better. Mike is staying with Mish and Trey. Malebo is allowed to see Mike anytime she wants. Lungile and Bonolo are back in SA, actually everyone is back in SA. Bonolo is a happy mother. Everything will go well for everyone at the end. Now the only problem is Mpho who's obsessed with Aaron.

...

[Mike]

I woke up only to find myself in a hospital. What happened to me? Why am I here? Well, the doctor was with me in the ward so I spoke to him.

...

Me: What happened to me, doctor?

Doc: You don't remember anything?

Me: No. How did I end up in the hospital?

Doc: Well, you are not in the hospital.

Me: Isn't this a ward?

Doc: No, it's a room in someone's house. We just turned it into a hospital ward for you.

Me: Whose house is this?

...

"My house" said a very beautiful lady standing at the door. She then walked in and sat down next to me. She introduced herself as Mish. I spoke to her.

...

Me: Well, I don't remember my name.

Mish: Your name is Mike, Mike... Uhm... Mike Anderson.

Me: What happened to me?

Mish: You were attacked by your ex-girlfriend. She's a real psycho, she bit your penis. You almost died, you were in a very bad condition.

Me: My penis?

Mish: Yes.

Me: Wow, that's huge.

Mish: I know right.

Me: So what happened to my ex-girlfriend?

Mish: She committed suicide.

Me: Good, but who found me?

Mish: Well, everything happened in the car just next to the road. I was passing by and then I saw everything. The girl ran away when she saw me so I brought you to my house.

Me: Thank you so much.

Mish: It's okay, don't mention it.

Me: A ring?? Are you married??

Mish: Yes, I am married. I live with my husband.

Me: Wow, your husband allowed you to bring me here and take care of me?

Mish: Yes he did, he's a very great man.

Me: Where's he now?

Mish: He's at work.

Me: Okay, I guess I'll see him later.

Mish: Yes, no problem. Since you are awake, I'll get the nurse to bath you and help you with everything.

Me: No, I won't feel comfortable. I'll do everything on my own.

Mish: But you are weak.

Me: I'll be fine.

Mish: Let me call your mother to help you then, she's upstairs.

Me: I have a mom?

Mish: Yes, I saw a photo of her in your wallet and when I checked your phone, it was clear that you are so close to your mom so I made sure that I find her.

Me: Well, I don't remember anything but I trust you.

Mish: Thank you for trusting me.

Me: It's okay, so where's my father?

Mish: I know nothing about your father but your mom says that your father passed on when you were just 2 years old.

Me: Oh, I see.

Mish: Yes, let me go call your mom to come help you out.

Me: You want my mom to see me naked?? Noo, it's impossible.

Mish: (Laughs) You are so stubborn just like me. Well fine, you'll do everything on your own.

...

She helped me get to the bathroom. She is such a great person. I got done with everything in the bathroom and walked slowly to bed. Mish was nowhere to be found. I spoke to the doctor.

...

Me: Where's she?

Doc: She went to prepare something to eat for you.

Me: She's so kind.

Doc: She indeed is kind.

...

A woman walked in. She started crying and calling me her son, I guess she's my mom.

...

[Tremaine / Trey]

Mpho came to work to see me. This girl is trouble. Who ever thought that she'd show us her true colors? She sat down and spoke.

...

Mpho: Hey, handsome.

Me: What can I do for you?

Mpho: A lot.

Me: I am listening.

...

She got up and sat on my laps. Everything happened so fast so I was just speechless and shocked. She looked at me and spoke.

...

Mpho: This is what I want with Aaron. I want to sit on his laps and kiss him like this

...

She said that kissing my cheek. I spoke.

...

Me: You are sick.

Mpho: No, I am in love.

Me: You are not in love, you are crazy. Mpho, you are playing with fire.

...

We heard someone clearing the throat. We both looked at the door's direction. I quickly pushed Mpho away. Mish was the one standing at the door. I spoke.

...

Me: Baby, it's not what you think it is.

Mish: Wow. Trey and Mpho?? I never saw this one coming.

Advertisement

26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Me: No baby, I swear to God, nothing is happening between this crazy girl and I.

Mish: She was sitting on your laps. Have you seen your cheek? It has got a red lipstick. You suck, Tremaine. You should've just told me that you want Mpho.

Me: I don't, please believe me.

Mish: I believe what my eyes saw. Here's your lunch, I decided to cook for you because I know that you couldn't eat breakfast but it looks like you are already eating Mpho.

Mpho: That's true, no man can resist me.



Mish: Well, Aaron did. You are a very bad person. I can't believe that at first you fooled all of us. You are so psychotic.

Mpho: I know. Get me Aaron and I will leave all of you alone

...

Mish just walked out. I dragged Mpho out of my office and locked it. I then ran after Mish who wanted nothing to do with me. I got in the car with her and spoke.

...

Me: Baby, please believe me.

Mish: Get out of my car.

Me: No, please listen to me.

Mish: Fine then, I'll drive.

...

She drove away and I was in the car. I spoke.

...

Me: Fine, stop the car. I'll get off. I have lot of work to do.

Mish: Bye.

...

She stopped the car and I got out. Mpho is really trouble.

...

[Mitchell / Mish]

I can't believe what I saw. Trey is a very bad person. Mpho was sitting on his laps and he expects me to believe that he's not into Mpho? Hell No, I believe what my eyes saw. I was in tears. When I got home, Malebo was still around. She spoke.

...

Malebo: What's wrong, my daughter?

Me: I am not your daughter, you are here because of your son.

Malebo: Okay fine, what's wrong Mitchell?

Me: It's nothing, just stay out of my way.

Malebo: When are you going to forgive me for everything?

Me: Forgive you for everything? Really?

Malebo: I forgave you for killing my husband.

Me: Your husband? Well, I didn't ask for your forgiveness. You can even tell the cops everything, I really don't care.

...

Father walked in. He was looking all saucy just like a wealthy man. I looked at Malebo and spoke.

...

Me: Mhmm daddy, you are looking great.

Danny: Thanks baby, how are you?

Me: I have my father in my life, obviously I am fine. I am very happy.

Danny: That's good. Hi Malebo.

Malebo: Hi Daniel.

...

With teary eyes, Malebo walked away. I gave my father a very big hug and spoke.

...

Me: I love you.

Danny: Mhmm, really?

Me: Of course, baby... uhm... baby? Did I say that?

Danny: Of course you did, you must be missing your husband.

Me: (Fake Smile) Mhmm, I do.

Danny: Now out with it.

Me: What?

Danny: I know you now. All the time after you fight with Trey, you mistakenly call me "baby" so talk to me. What did he do?

Me: He did nothing.

Danny: Heyy, don't lie to me.

Me: I wouldn't lie.

...

He folded his arms and just stared at me. I started crying and told him everything. He was so shocked. He then spoke.

...

Danny: Are you sure of what you just said?

Me: Yes, he's cheating on me, daddy.

Danny: Did you give him a chance to explain?

Me: Explain what exactly? I just told you that I saw everything.

Danny: Why are you people still keeping Mpho alive? What's going to happen the day she hurts all of you?

Me: Stop being negative, nothing will happen.

Danny: I hope so but don't say that I didn't warn you.

Me: Yes father. Please sit down, I'll get you something to eat.

...

I first went upstairs. I started thinking about what father said. Do we have to kill Mpho? Well No, I won't do it, I am not a

murderer. I've told myself that I won't kill anymore. I killed Marla and Bob so I can't kill Mpho. But why is she after the Banks men? My marriage is just a joke, one minute Trey and I are fine then the next we are not. Malebo walked in and spoke.

...

Malebo: I heard your conversation with your father. I've been trying to tell you that Mpho is bad news. She once came to my house and she told me how she'll destroy your marriage and ruin your life if you don't help her get Aaron.

Me: And why are you only telling me now?

Malebo: I tried before but as always you were not interested in listening to me. I don't believe that Trey is cheating on you. This must be a way of Mpho trying to destroy your marriage.

Marriage is not a child's play, you must just never walk away from your marriage without a fight. Fight for your man, don't be foolish because of Mpho. Trey is not cheating on you.

Me: Where were you in life when I needed motherly advices? Listen, keep your advices to yourself. You failed a long time ago. You will never be my mother so stop acting like one. I didn't say anything about walking away from my marriage.

Malebo: But you believe that your husband is cheating.

Me: You don't know what I saw so just back off.

...

I walked out of my bedroom and went to the kitchen. I phoned Aaron and told him everything. He was so angry, I don't know if he was angry at Mpho or Trey. Bonolo and Lungile came to visit, they were with baby Lindo. Malebo was with Mike, we didn't allow her to come near us. Trey came home and my mood changed. Danny spoke to Trey.

...

Danny: You and I have to talk!!

Trey: Father in-law, I can explain.

Me: Daddy, please let it go.

...

My father did not listen to me. He went to Trey's study with Trey. I hope that he won't be too hard on Trey. I hope he won't beat him up. I got up, as I was about to go upstairs, I felt dizzy and fell. What could be wrong with me now?? Stress??

...

To be continued...

47

[Bonolo / Nolly]

I was shocked when my sister just fell. I gave the baby to Lungile and ran to Mish. I helped her get up and spoke.

...

Me: Are you okay, Mish?

Mish: Yes I am fine, just dizzy.

Me: Pregnant?

Mish: Huh??

Me: Are you pregnant?

Mish: No, I am not.

Me: Are you sure?

Mish: Yes, I am sure.

...

Malebo walked in and spoke.

...

Malebo: Is Mish pregnant?

Me: Did you impregnate her?

Malebo: Sorry.

Me: How's your foolish son?

Malebo: He's getting better.

Me: I hate him for what he did to my sisters. I hate him so much.

Malebo: Well, it's understandable.

Me: I also hate you.

Malebo: I know.

Me: So if you know why are you here?

Malebo: Uhm... Well, I am looking for Daniel.

Me: Why? Stay away from him. He won't give you any money, you shameless wom...

Lungi: (Shouts) Enough Bonolo, that's your mother you are talking to. For how long are you going to stay mad at her? You know you are lucky to have both parents in life. You can see that your mom is now a better person so why can't you just forgive her? Okay, if you can't forgive her, stop giving her attitude, and stop disrespecting her.

...

I looked at Lungile with teary eyes. I then looked at Malebo and spoke.

...



Me: Today my husband rudely spoke to me all because of you.  
Wow Malebo, wow

Malebo: I am so...

Me: (Yells) Shut up, just shut up!!!

...

I then walked out of the house. Lungile will be with the baby for the whole day. Mish ran after me. She stopped me and spoke.

...

Mish: Sister, you can't go like this, please.

Me: I am so mad at Lungile.

Mish: Maybe he's right, maybe we should stop being angry and move on.

Me: How possible is that?

Mish: Look, Malebo may have gotten rid of us by marrying us off back then. It was not nice after our marriage because our husbands were not treating us good, now they do so why can't we just be thankful and happy?

Me: Yeah you are right, but what about what happened to father?

Mish: He's never angry around Malebo so obviously father is fine, we can do the same.

Me: Should we build a relationship with Malebo?

Mish: Let's give her one last chance.

Me: One last chance?

Mish: Mhmm.

Me: And if she fails?

Mish: Let's be positive.

Me: Fine then, I hear you.

Mish: Thanks for understanding. Let's go back in the house and tell her that we are willing to give her another chance.

Me: Okay then.

...

We went back inside. We found everyone sitting down. We told them that we are willing to give Malebo a second chance in our lives. They were okay with everything but daddy was more happy. Could it be that he's still into Malebo? Mish fell again. I spoke.

...

Me: Mish, something is wrong with you. Let's take you to the hospital.

Mish: No, I am fine.

Malebo: But this is happening for the second time.

Mish: I know, it's just marriage stress.

Me: What about marriage stress?

Mish: It's getting to me. Some of us are not so lucky when it comes to marriage. Our husbands are cheating on us.

Trey: Mitchell Banks, I am not cheating on you.

Mish: Was I talking about you, Trey?

Trey: Yes, do you think that I am foolish?

Mish: Maybe.

...

Mish then walked away.

...

[Mpho]

I was at home when Aaron walked in. He was so angry. As I was about to hug him, he gave me a hot slap and I hit the wall with my head. Tears streamed down my face as I spoke.

...

Me: Babe, you slapped me?

Aaron: I am not your babe. What is wrong with you? Stay away from me and stay away from my loved ones.

Me: Or what?

...

Aaron gave me another hot slap. I was now crying. I tried fighting with him but he beat me up, he was really strong. I was shocked. Aaron was never like this so what triggered this anger he got? I was now lying on the floor and I was really bleeding. He knelt down next to me and spoke.

...

Aaron: I don't like doing this to women or anyone but you deserve this. It's better than killing you. This was your warning

Advertisement

stay away from my loved ones.

Me: You beat me up, Aaron?

Aaron: And next time I'll kill you. Believe me. Don't take advantage of my kindness.

Me: Wow!!

...

He then walked out. A perfect guy beat me up today. Who ever thought that Aaron would do this? I blame Mish, she must have

told Aaron about what happened in Trey's office earlier today. I managed to stand up. I then called my doctor, I was really in a bad condition. My doctor attended to me and left, I then called Thabo, he's my brother and he can do anything for me. He came to my house within 30 minutes. I was lying in bed, he sat down next to me and spoke.

...

Thabo: Who did this to you?

Me: Mitchell.

Thabo: Why?

Me: She was telling me to stay away from Aaron.

Thabo: Yes, stay away from Aaron. He doesn't love you.

Me: But I love him.

Thabo: You are really stubborn so what can I do for you?

Me: Kidnap Mitchell and torture her.

Thabo: Okay then, done.

Me: Thank you, brother.

Thabo: I have to go now.

...

He kissed my forehead and left. I was so happy. I've been asking him to kidnap Mish for so long but he was refusing so now he agreed and I am happy. It's payback time!!!

...

[One Week Later]

[Tremaine / Trey]

Mish is still mad at me now she's missing. Aaron is out of the country so he doesn't know that Mish is missing. Mish been missing for two days now and we are failing to find her. I have been following Mpho for two days to see if she's the one who took Mish but it looks like it's not her. Where could Mish be? Mike is now getting much better. I went to his room to give him food. He spoke.

...

Mike: Where's Mish?

Me: Work.

Mike: I don't believe you.

Me: She's at work.

Mike: You are lying to me.

Me: Okay fine, she's missing.

Mike: Since?

Me: Two days ago.

Mike: And you still haven't found her? Why are you relaxing?  
Mish is a great person, you know?

Me: I am not relaxing. I am here to give you food.

Mike: I won't eat until she comes back.

...

I had to beg Mike to eat. He ate and got up. He then spoke.

...

Mike: Tell me everything about the day Mis...

Me: No, sit down. You are not okay.

Mike: I am not a baby you know? I have to find Mish.

Me: Danny, Lungile and I will find Mish. Don't worry.

...

Mike is stubborn just like his sisters. Bonolo walked in and convinced Mike to rest.

...

[Another Week Later]

Kitso and Sifiso returned from their honeymoon and they were met with bad news. Mish was still missing. Malebo was finding

comfort in Danny, weird right?? Nobody was okay. It was weird how Mish can just disappear like that.

...

[Danny]

I met up with my son in-laws, they actually came to my house. As we were sitting down, coming up with plans on how we can find Mish, I spoke.

...

Me: My gut keeps on telling me that Mpho is behind everything.

Trey: But I am always following her. From today I sent some guys to follow her.

Me: Mpho is behind everything, that's how I feel.

Lungi: Maybe she noticed that she's being followed.

Me: My point exactly.

Sif: So what should we do?

Me: I think we should confront her.

...

Mike walked in and spoke.

...



Mike: That's a bad idea.

Me: Mike, how did you get in?

Mike: Your guards opened for me.

Me: I see.

Mike: Helicopter.

Trey: What about it?

Mike: We use it to follow Mpho around. She won't know that she's being followed if we use a helicopter.

Me: Wow, this guy is smart.

Lungi: Very smart, Trey please call the guys who are following Mpho and ask them where they are, from there we'll send other guys in the helicopter.

Trey: Okay then.

Mike: Good, I'll organize a perfect helicopter. It does everything, it's just perfect.

Sif: You lost your memory, how will you differentiate between a helicopter and a cougar?

Mike: (Laughs) You are very funny. I know the difference between a bus and a train so obviously I also know the difference between a helicopter and a cougar. I'll go now.

Sif: Okay, cool.

...

Mike left. If Mpho has got my daughter, I will not spare her. I will kill her and no one will stop me this time.

...

To be continued...

48

[Mish]

I woke up only to find myself tied in bed. This other guy was with me. I spoke.

...

Me: Who are you and what happened to me?

Him: I am Thabo and I abducted you.

Me: Why? I don't know you.

Him: Well, let me introduce myself. My name is Thabo and I am Mpho's brother.

Me: Wow, you are handsome.

Him: I don't like compliments. Why did you beat up my sister?

Me: When?

Him: Don't act dumb with me.

...

Jesus, when did I beat up Mpho? Am I dreaming? What nonsense is this? I spoke.

...

Me: I really don't know what you are talking about. I haven't seen Mpho for so long.

Him: Really?

Me: Yes.

Him: I don't believe you.

Me: Obviously you believe your psychotic sister.

Him: Are you calling my sister a psychopath?

Me: Yes, we both know that she is one. Aaron does not love her anymore. I tried to talk to Aaron, you know?

Him: Mhmm.

Me: You are too handsome to be following in your sister's footsteps.

...

He gave me a hot slap and looked away. I laughed and spoke.

...

Me: You are not used to this now, are you?

Him: Keep quiet.

Me: Save yourself and let me go. Do you know who my father is?

Him: I don't want to know.

Me: Are you sure?

Him: Yes.

Me: Okay then. I won't tell you but don't say I didn't warn you. My father will definitely skin you alive with the help of my husband.

Him: Are you married?

Me: Yes, I am.

Him: As young as you are?

Me: I am twenty something. Marriage is for anyone who's ready.

Him: I see.

Me: Yes, can I ask you for a favor?

Him: Heyyy what favor? I shouldn't even be treating you nice right now. My sister won't be happy.

Me: I am pregnant and I am sure that your psychotic sister will beat me up when she gets here, can you please protect me and my baby?

Him: Are you pregnant?

Me: That's what I said.

Him: I see.

Me: My family does not know that I am pregnant because I had pregnancy complications and the doctor was saying that I should abort and start afresh. It was the only solution because if I were to keep the baby, I was going to be the one to die after giving birth.

...

He sat down next to me and spoke.

...

Him: So did you abort?

Me: No Thabo, I didn't abort. I don't know how I got here but what I know is that you might have abducted me on my way from the hospital. By the Grace of God, I don't have pregnancy complications anymore and I was going to tell my loved ones.

Him: I see.

Me: Yeah, do you have a wife?

Him: A wife to be.

Me: Do you love her?

Him: More than life itself.

Me: You are going to lose her if you continue keeping me here. I won't be able to help you, you have to let me go or else you'll

lose all of your loved ones. Talk to Mpho if you really love her. Make her see the light. My father is Daniel Molefe, he will definitely kill you and your loved ones, and I won't be able to stop him even if I want to. Please do the right thing. I genuinely think that you are not a bad person and I don't want any harm to come to you and your wife to be.

Him: Whaaat??? Danny???

Me: I'm glad you know him.

Him: Okay fine, I'll talk to Mpho. I promise.

Me: Then let me go.

Him: Wait... How do I know that Danny is really your father?

Me: Check my phone.

...

Thabo untied me and gave me my phone. It needed a password that's why he gave it to me. As I was busy showing him the pictures of daddy and I, the door broke down and my father walked in with Trey, Lungile, Mike, some men and Mpho. Actually the men who were with my father had Mpho at gunpoint. Mpho was crying. My father was fuming, he pointed a gun at Thabo. I stood before Thabo in order to protect him. I looked at my father with begging eyes and spoke.

...

Me: Daddy, please let him go. He's a great guy.

Danny: How's he a great guy? He kidnapped you.

Me: He didn't. You will not shoot him, he's getting married soon.

Trey: Princess Mish, what are you saying?

Me: My prince, you have to believe me. Thabo is a great guy, he's nothing like Mpho. I am pregnant and he's been taking good care of me.

Trey: The pregnancy lie again?

Me: I am not lying this time. I swear on all my loved ones. I am pregnant.

Trey: (Smiles) Are you really pregnant?

Me: Yes, I am carrying twins.

Trey: Really? Twins?

Me: Yes, so tell my father to put down the gun or else I'll take a bullet for Thabo.

Thabo: Mish, what are you saying?

Me: Thabo, you are a great guy, you did this because you thought that I beat up Mpho, now that Mpho is here ask her if I really beat her up.



Mpho: (Cries) No, I was beaten up by Aaron.

Me: Whaaat? Aaron? The perfect prince?

Mpho: Yes, I was also shocked.

Me: I am sorry. I'll talk to Aaron when he comes back but you have to understand that Aaron does not love you anymore. You will meet a guy who will love you.

Mpho: Yes, you are right.

Thabo: Mpho, Mish is right. How on earth do you turn psycho on a person like Mish? She's a great person. Apologize.

...

Mpho started apologizing. I forgave her. My father let everyone go. We all went home (My house). Everyone was happy that I am pregnant. Bonolo spoke.

...

Nolly: I knew that you are pregnant. Why did you hide your pregnancy from us?

Me: Because I had pregnancy complications. I was told to abort but I got stubborn and refused. The doctor had told me that if I don't terminate the pregnancy, I will die after giving birth. I told myself that it's fine, I'll be the one to die but when I went to my last check up, everything was fine with me. The twins are okay.

I was shocked and happy that things turned out better. God is truly amazing.

Tso: I also want a baby. I am glad that you are okay.

Me: Thank you, sister.

...

[One Month Later]

[Author]

Advertisement

26, 26, 0.3); -webkit-text-size-adjust: auto;">Danny and Malebo are in good terms, they have been spending a lot of time together. Malebo is really a better person. Danny is really forgiving. Mish's husband is so happy that Mish is going to give birth to twins. Life for everyone is good. The three sisters are happy in their marriage. No one's marriage is now collapsing.

...

[Mike]

I was passing by this other house when I started feeling like I know it. I stopped the car outside the yard and got out. I rang the bell and some guy attended to it.

...

Him: Hello?

Me: Hey, can you please let me in?

Him: Boss, is that you?

...

Did he just call me boss? I was shocked. To my surprise when I used my fingerprint to open the gate, the gate opened. Could this be my house? I drove in. This other guy came running to me. I got out of the car and spoke to him.

...

Me: Why did you call me boss?

Him: You are the boss.

Me: The boss of...?

Him: You are my boss and this is your house. What's wrong? You seem lost.

Me: I lost my memory, they said.

Him: Oh, sorry boss but I can help you get back your memory. I know everything about you.

Me: You promise to help?

Him: For you boss, I'd do anything.

Me: Okay then, let's go in.

Him: Sure.

...

We went inside the house. My photos were all over. This is definitely my house. He led me to my study. We sat down and he gave me photos and started talking.

...

Him: That is your father, Bob Anderson. Unfortunately he's no more. He got murdered like few months back. His body was found in the river. The people who murdered him must know a lot about forensics. I mean, nothing was found on your father's body.

Me: Was I close to him?

Him: You were planning to kill him so I wouldn't say that you guys were close.

Me: Kill him for what?

Him: You said that you didn't like the Andersons.

Me: Good riddance then, go on. Who's this one? Isn't she Mish? Wait... This is Mish, Bonolo, Kitso and Malebo, am I right?

Him: Yes you are right. You wanted to get rid of Mish, Kitso and Bonolo because they are Malebo's daughters and you wanted Malebo only to yourself.

Me: Isn't Malebo my mom?

Him: She is.

Me: Are you saying that she's also these three girls' mother?

Him: Yes.

Me: You mean I have sisters?

Him: Yes.

Me: So I wanted to kill them so that I can have my mother to myself?

Him: Yes.

Me: Isn't that stupidity?

Him: It is boss, I mean you should be happy that you have siblings.

Me: So now I know the reason why they are taking care of me.

Him: You kidnapped Kitso and Mish before. I don't know what you did to them or what they did to you but that was the last time I saw you.

Me: It looks like I was really evil. Why would I kidnap my own sisters? It's really bad.

Him: You should apologize to them.

Me: How will I ever face them? I can't go back to them.

Him: Boss, you have to.

Me: I can't, I'll stay here from now on.

Him: Okay then boss, but write a letter to them. I'll deliver it.

Me: And say what?

Him: Apologize for everything. Tell them that you know the truth and you are sorry.

Me: Okay then, when?

Him: Now.

Me: Okay, I'll do that.

...

[Mitchell / Mish]

As we were at home, we got a letter from Mike. It read "Hello everyone. I am so so sorry for what I did to you in the past. Today I got the whole truth from a guy who used to work for me or a guy who still works for me. He told me that I was a very bad person and that I kidnapped Mish and Kitso before. I don't know what I did to Kitso and Mish but I am really sorry. I was also told that my father, Bob Anderson is dead, the truth is I didn't get a chance to kill him. I was told that I was planning to kill him because I hated the Andersons. I am really a bad person. I was told that I kidnapped Mish and Kitso because they are my sisters. I am really sorry my dear sisters, I am sorry my dear mother. Please forgive me Mr Molefe, please forgive me

Trey, please forgive me Sifiso, please forgive me Lungile, please forgive me Aaron, please forgive me everyone. I am not coming back to you. I am so ashamed and I can't face you so it's best if I stay away. I love you all and thank you for everything. Yours truly, Mike."

I was in tears. This is not fair. We were all used to having Mike around but now he doesn't want to stay with us anymore. It really hurts. Malebo spoke.

...

Malebo: He must be at his house.

Tso: Please give us his address.

Malebo: Okay.

...

Malebo gave us the address. Kitso, Bonolo and I went to Mike's house. Mike refused to open for us so I threatened to end my life. He opened the gate and we went in. We begged him to forget about the past but he was being stubborn. I got angry and started telling him everything - from how he kidnapped my sister and I and how he forced himself on us to how I murdered his father. I told him about all the things the Anderson family did to us in the past. He had teary eyes. He looked at me and spoke.

...

Mike: You mean that I forced myself on you?

Tso: Yes, you did and we forgave you.

Mike: Did I impregnate you, Mish?

Me: No, you didn't. Kitso and I went to see the doctor after uhm... You know. So right now I am carrying Trey's kids.

Mike: Oh, thank you lord.

Me: We forgave you, brother so please don't do this to us. We want you in our lives.

Nolly: Yes Mike, please listen to everyone. You are now one of us.

Mike: But...

Me: I killed your father and stepmother, why are you not mad at me?

Mike: How can I be mad at you? You are a great person.

Me: You are also a great person. You are now a better person. We all made you lose your memory so you should be mad for that.

Mike: I am happy that I lost my memory. I feel like a better person now.



Nolly: You are a better person.

Tso: Yes brother, you are.

Me: They are telling the truth, please go home with us or else I am going to end my life.

Mike: Fine then.

Me: Everyone forgave you so just be yourself.

Mike: Okay then.

...

We shared a group hug and left. Everyone was so happy to see Mike.

...

[Few Months Later]

[Author]

Mish gave birth to the twins and she's happily married. Kitso is pregnant and happily married. Bonolo's child is really growing up and Bonolo is happily married. Aaron got himself a real girlfriend and they are engaged. Mpho moved on, she's a better person now, all thanks to her brother. Danny and Malebo are married. Everyone deserves a second chance in life and every marriage deserves a second chance. In a marriage, you can't just give up without at least trying. There are ups and downs in

marriages but if you are willing to fight for the ones you love, you will always win. The three sisters are now the happiest of them all. Mike is now Mike Molefe and he found himself a very respectful girlfriend. Never ever in life let your marriage collapse without a fight. Be courageous and always love your partner. Respect your partner and never be abusive. Take marriage serious and be blessed by the lord, Almighty.

.....**The End**.....